University of Massachusetts Amherst

ScholarWorks@UMass Amherst

Open Access Dissertations

5-2010

Generalized EMP and Nonlinear Schrodinger-type Reformulations of Some Scaler Field Cosmological Models

Jennie D'Ambroise
University of Massachusetts Amherst

Follow this and additional works at: https://scholarworks.umass.edu/open_access_dissertations

Part of the Mathematics Commons, and the Statistics and Probability Commons

Recommended Citation

D'Ambroise, Jennie, "Generalized EMP and Nonlinear Schrodinger-type Reformulations of Some Scaler Field Cosmological Models" (2010). *Open Access Dissertations*. 225.
https://scholarworks.umass.edu/open_access_dissertations/225

GENERALIZED EMP AND NONLINEAR SCHRÖDINGER-TYPE REFORMULATIONS OF SOME SCALAR FIELD COSMOLOGICAL MODELS

A Dissertation Presented

by

JENNIE D'AMBROISE

Submitted to the Graduate School of the
University of Massachusetts Amherst in partial fulfillment
of the requirements for the degree of

DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

May 2010

Department of Mathematics and Statistics

GENERALIZED EMP AND NONLINEAR SCHRÖDINGER-TYPE REFORMULATIONS OF SOME SCALAR FIELD COSMOLOGICAL MODELS

A Dissertation Presented

by

JENNIE D'AMBROISE

Approved as to style and content by:

_____

Floyd Williams, Chair

_____

Panayotis Kevrekidis, Member

_____

Robert Kusner, Member

_____

Jennie Traschen, Member

_____

George Avrunin, Department Head
Mathematics and Statistics

Dedication

This paper is dedicated to my family,

for supporting me even when I am incomprehensible.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

One would like to believe that life is simple and that mathematics is easy to understand. I would like to thank Floyd Williams for showing me that sometimes it is possible for both to be true.

To my thesis committee members, Professors Panayotis Kevrekidis, Robert Kusner and Jennie Traschen, thank you for many useful suggestions on my research. Also, thanks to Michael Satz for always entertaining mathematical conversation.

I would like to thank the countless individuals who have made possible a rich and diverse experience over the course of more than a decade of education at the University of Massachusetts at Amherst. The programs in place have allowed me to have numerous abroad and professional experiences, and the friendly and inquisitive nature of the individuals in the Department of Mathematics and Statistics has made for an enjoyable and rigorous graduate experience.

To my students, thank you for surprising me with your willingness to listen to me talk about mathematics.

To my fellow martial artists, thank you for always welcoming me without question.

To my dear friend John Gusler, thank you for always helping me to get where I need to go.

ABSTRACT

GENERALIZED EMP AND NONLINEAR

SCHRÖDINGER-TYPE REFORMULATIONS OF SOME

SCALAR FIELD COSMOLOGICAL MODELS

MAY 2010

JENNIE D'AMBROISE,

B.S., UNIVERSITY OF MASSACHUSETTS AT AMHERST

Ph.D., UNIVERSITY OF MASSACHUSETTS AT AMHERST

Directed by: Professor Floyd L. Williams

We show that Einstein's gravitational field equations for the Friedmann-Robertson-Lemaître-Walker (FRLW) and for two conformal versions of the Bianchi I and Bianchi V perfect fluid scalar field cosmological models, can be equivalently reformulated in terms of a single equation of either generalized Ermakov-Milne-Pinney (EMP) or (non)linear Schrödinger (NLS) type. This work generalizes or presents an alternative to similar reformulations published by the authors who inspired this thesis: R. Hawkins, J. Lidsey, T. Christodoulakis, T. Grammenos, C. Helias, P. Kevrekidis, G. Papadopoulos and F. Williams. In particular we cast much of these authors' works into a single framework via straightforward derivations of the EMP and NLS equations from a simple linear combination of the relevant

Einstein equations. By rewriting the resulting expression in terms of the volume expansion factor and performing a change of variables, we obtain an uncoupled EMP or NLS equation that is independent of the imposition of additional conservation equations. Since the correspondences shown here present an alternative route for obtaining exact solutions to Einstein's equations, we reconstruct many known exact solutions via their EMP or NLS counterparts and show by numerical analysis the stability properties of many solutions.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

LIST OF TABLES

LIST OF FIGURES

C H A P T E R   1

INTRODUCTION

1.1 Einstein's field equations (EFE)

Einstein's gravitational field equations (EFE)

$$G_{ij} = -\kappa T_{ij} + \Lambda g_{ij} \qquad (1.1)$$

for $i, j \in \{0, \ldots, d\}$, are the essential equations of general relativity in $d+1$ space-time dimensions. The Einstein tensor is $G_{ij} \overset{def.}{=} R_{ij} - \frac{1}{2} R g_{ij}$ where R_{ij} is the Ricci tensor, R is the scalar curvature and g_{ij} is the metric. Also Λ is the cosmological constant and κ is a generalization of $8\pi G$, for G Newton's constant, to $d+1$ spacetime dimensions. In terms of Christoffel symbols of the second kind

$$\Gamma_{ij}^k \overset{def.}{=} \frac{1}{2} \sum_{s=0} g^{sk} \left(g_{si,j} - g_{ij,s} + g_{js,i}\right) \qquad (1.2)$$

for $i, j, k \in \{0, 1, \ldots, d\}$, we define the Ricci tensor to be

$$R_{ij} \overset{def.}{=} \sum_{k=0}^{d} \left(\Gamma_{kj,i}^k - \Gamma_{ij,k}^k\right) + \sum_{m=0}^{d}\sum_{n=0}^{d} \Gamma_{im}^n \Gamma_{nj}^m - \sum_{m=0}^{d}\sum_{n=0}^{d} \Gamma_{ij}^m \Gamma_{nm}^n \qquad (1.3)$$

for $i, j \in \{0, 1, \ldots, d\}$ (note that others may define the Ricci tensor to be the negative of (1.3), in which case the Einstein equations would be $G_{ij} = \kappa T_{ij} - \Lambda g_{ij}$). In (1.2), the subscript $_{,n}$ denotes differentiation with respect to x_n.

We will consider an energy-momentum tensor

$$T_{ij} = T_{ij}^{(1)} + T_{ij}^{(2)} \tag{1.4}$$

that is the sum of two terms. The first term is the energy-momentum tensor for a minimally coupled scalar field ϕ with potential V so that

$$T_{ij}^{(1)} = \partial_i \phi \partial_j \phi - g_{ij} \left[\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=0}^{d} \partial^k \phi \partial_k \phi + V \circ \phi \right], \tag{1.5}$$

where $\circ$ denotes composition and $\partial^k \phi \overset{def.}{=} \sum_{l=0}^{d} g^{kl} \partial_l \phi$. We take $\phi(t)$ to depend only on time $x_0 = t$ so that (1.5) reduces to

$$T_{ij}^{(1)} = \delta_{0i} \delta_{0j} \dot{\phi}^2 - g_{ij} \left[\frac{1}{2} g^{00} \dot{\phi}^2 + V \circ \phi \right] \tag{1.6}$$

where $\delta_{0i} \overset{def.}{=} \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } i = 0 \\ 0 & \text{if } i \neq 0 \end{cases}$. The second term in (1.4) is defined as

$$T^{(2)} = \begin{pmatrix} -\rho(t)g_{00} & & & & \\ & p(t)g_{11} & & & \\ & & p(t)g_{22} & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & p(t)g_{dd} \end{pmatrix} \tag{1.7}$$

for density and pressure functions $\rho(t), p(t)$, and where the off-diagonal entries are zero.

In the special case when the metric is diagonal and $g_{00} = -1$, (1.6) shows that

$$T_{00}^{(1)} = \frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}^2 + V \circ \phi \tag{1.8}$$

and

$$T_{ii}^{(1)} = g_{ii} \left(\frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi \right) \tag{1.9}$$

2

for $1 \leq i \leq d$. That is, $T_{ij}^{(1)}$ reduces to the energy-momentum tensor for a perfect fluid with density and pressure

$$\rho_\phi(t) = \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + V \circ \phi \quad \text{and} \quad p_\phi(t) = \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi, \tag{1.10}$$

respectively, in terms of the scalar field and potential.

In Chapter 2 we show the equivalence of solving three types of ordinary differential equations: a generalized Ermakov-Milne-Pinney type equation, a non-linear Schrödinger type equation and a third equation that we will see arises in each of the cosmological models considered in this thesis. Since the third type of equation is derived from Einstein's field equations in terms of scale factors, we will refer to it as a *scale factor equation*. Each subsection of Chapters 3-7 shows the application of a correspondence established in Chapter 2 to a specific cosmological model. Following each theorem in Chapters 3-7, we consider special cases where exact solutions of Einstein's equations are derived from exact solutions of an NLS or EMP. For many examples we show numerical (in-)stability graphs of the exact solutions. The appendices show some extra calculations including some computations with exact solutions to EMP and NLS equations [3, 7, 21].

This thesis is a partial response to the proposal by R. Hawkins and J. Lidsey that EMP equations may appear in certain pure scalar field or other classes of cosmological models [18]. The results in Chapters 3-7 either generalize or present an alternative to the reformulations of Einstein's equations seen in [5, 6, 9, 10, 12, 18, 20, 22, 24, 30, 31]. In [5] and [31], the presence of an exponential term in the EMP formulation of a Bianchi I model couples the system to a second equation; in contrast, we find a simpler term so that the Bianchi I EMP here is not coupled to a second equation. The methods here have been noticed by other researchers [16, 17] and have been used in some cosmological applications. A brief overview of

the methods in this thesis can be found in a shorter paper by the author [11]. For future work one may consider whether the methods presented here can be extended to non-Bianchi universes such as a Kantowski-Sachs.

1.2   Conservation equations

The divergence of Einstein's tensor $G_{ij} = R_{ij} - \frac{1}{2}Rg_{ij}$ is zero. Therefore by Einstein's equations (1.1) the divergence of the energy-momentum tensor is zero. That is, the conservation equation

$$div(T)_l = \sum_{i,j} g^{ij}\left[\partial_i T_{lj} - \sum_k \Gamma_{ij}^k T_{lk} - \sum_k \Gamma_{il}^k T_{kj}\right] = 0 \qquad (1.11)$$

for $i,j,k,l \in \{0,1,\ldots d\}$ is automatically satisfied by any solution g_{ij} of Einstein's equations. When T_{ij} is taken to be a sum as in (1.4), one can further impose the condition

$$div(T^{(2)})_l = 0 \qquad (1.12)$$

for $0 \le l \le d$. The results of this thesis do not rely on $T_{ij}^{(2)}$ satisfying (1.12), which is not imposed in the theorems in Chapters 3-7. For example, if the scalar field $\phi(t)$ and the potential V are non-constant, the conservation equation (1.12) may not hold for arbitrary density $\rho(t)$ and pressure $p(t)$ satisfying a corresponding EMP or NLS. To obtain $T_{ij}^{(2)}$ satisfying (1.12) one can impose an analogue conservation equation on the EMP or NLS side of the correspondence. We record in Appendix F equivalent versions of the conservation equation (1.12) for $l = 0$, translated into EMP and NLS variables for each of the theorems in Chapters 3-7.

4

1.3 Guide to numerical and exact solutions

The mapping of closed form solutions of EMP or NLS equations to solutions of Einstein's equations cannot always be executed analytically, but we will consider some solutions for which an exact solution to Einstein's equations can indeed be (re-)derived via the correspondences in this thesis. Some exact solutions of Einstein's equations in the literature [1, 2, 4, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 19, 20, 23, 24, 26, 27, 29] will be seen to arise from an exact solution of an EMP or NLS equation.

For some solutions we show a stability graph, where the exact solution is shown in bold font for comparison. The numerical solutions were generated by running the Livermore solver (LSODE) [28] on the second order EMP or NLS equation, coupled to the differential equation for the reparameterization function. In all cases we graph the volume expansion factor and show that most exact solutions seen here are unstable. Solutions are said to be unstable here if the difference between the exact and numerical solutions grow by at least two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

CHAPTER 2

THE GENERAL CORRESPONDENCES

2.1 Scale factor and generalized EMP equations

In this thesis, the Einstein equations (1.1) for a number of cosmological models are reduced to a scale factor equation of the form

$$\dot{H}(t) + \delta H(t)^2 + \varepsilon\dot{\phi}(t)^2 = \sum_{i=0}^{N} \frac{G_i(t)}{a(t)^{A_i}} \tag{2.1}$$

for $H(t) \overset{def.}{=} \dot{a}(t)/a(t)$ and $\delta, \varepsilon, A_i \in \mathbb{R}$. In this section we show a mapping between solution sets $(a(t), \phi(t), G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t))$ of (2.1) and solution sets $(Y(\tau), Q(\tau), \lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau))$ of the generalized EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \sum_{i=0}^{N} \frac{\lambda_i(\tau)}{Y(\tau)^{B_i}} \tag{2.2}$$

for $B_i \in \mathbb{R}$. The dictionary between solutions of (2.1) and (2.2) is as follows:

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} \tag{2.3}$$

$$q\varepsilon\varphi'(\tau)^2 = Q(\tau) \tag{2.4}$$

$$G_i(t) = \frac{\theta^2}{q}\lambda_i(\tau(t)) \tag{2.5}$$

for $0 \leq i \leq N \in \mathbb{N}$,

$$\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)) \tag{2.6}$$

6

and where $\tau(t)$ is a solution to the differential equation

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta a(t)^{q-\delta} \tag{2.7}$$

for some constants $\theta > 0$ and $q \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$. Here dot denotes differentiation with respect to t and prime denotes differentiation with respect to τ. Also the powers A_i and B_i in (2.1) and (2.2) respectively, are related by the equation

$$B_i = \frac{A_i + q - 2\delta}{q}. \tag{2.8}$$

Theorem 2.1.1 *Suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $a(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ which satisfy the scale factor equation (2.1) for some $\delta, \varepsilon, A_0, \ldots, A_N \in \mathbb{R}$ and $N \in \mathbb{N}$. If $f(\tau)$ is the inverse of a function $\tau(t)$ which satisfies (2.7) for some $\theta > 0$ and $q \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$, then by (2.3)-(2.5) the functions*

$$Y(\tau) = a(f(\tau))^q \tag{2.9}$$

$$Q(\tau) = q\varepsilon\varphi'(\tau)^2 \tag{2.10}$$

$$\lambda_i(\tau) = \frac{q}{\theta^2}G_i(f(\tau)) \tag{2.11}$$

solve the generalized EMP equation (2.2) for B_i as in (2.8) and for

$$\varphi(\tau) = \phi(f(\tau)) \tag{2.12}$$

(by (2.6)). Note that since the function $a(t)$ and the constant θ are both positive, $\dot{\tau}(t) > 0$ so that $\tau(t)$ is an increasing function mapping $t \in \mathbb{R}$ to $\tau \in \mathbb{R}$ and therefore the inverse function $f(\tau)$ exists.

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $Y(\tau) > 0$, a continuous function $Q(\tau)$, and also functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ which satisfy the

generalized EMP equation (2.2) for some $B_i \in \mathbb{R}$ and $N \in \mathbb{N}$. In order to construct

functions which solve (2.1), first find $\tau(t)$ and $\varphi(\tau)$ which solve

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t))^{(q-\delta)/q} \tag{2.13}$$

and (2.4) respectively, for some $\theta > 0, q \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ and $\delta \in \mathbb{R}$ (note that (2.13)

was obtained by combining (2.3) and (2.7)). Then the set of functions $(a(t), \phi(t),$

$G_0, \ldots, G_N)$ given by (2.3), (2.6) and (2.5) solves the scale factor equation (2.1)

for A_i as in (2.8). That is, the powers A_i are given in terms of B_i by the equation

$$A_i = q(B_i - 1) + 2\delta. \tag{2.14}$$

Proof. To prove the forward implication, we begin by computing $f'(\tau)$, a quantity

that will be required to simplify the derivatives of $Y(\tau)$. Since $f(\tau(t)) = t$ we

differentiate this relation with respect to t to obtain $f'(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t) = 1$ so that $f'(\tau) = 1/\dot{\tau}(f(\tau))$, and by (2.7) we have

$$f'(\tau) = \frac{1}{\theta} a(f(\tau))^{\delta-q}. \tag{2.15}$$

Differentiating the definition (2.9) of $Y(\tau)$ and using (2.15) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} Y'(\tau) &= qa(f(\tau))^{q-1}\dot{a}(f(\tau))f'(\tau) \\ &= \frac{q}{\theta}H(f(\tau))a(f(\tau))^{\delta}. \end{aligned} \tag{2.16}$$

Differentiating again and using (2.15) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} Y''(\tau) &= \frac{q}{\theta}f'(\tau)\left[\dot{H}(f(\tau))a(f(\tau))^{\delta} + \delta H(f(\tau))^2 a(f(\tau))^{\delta}\right] \\ &= \frac{q}{\theta^2}a(f(\tau))^{2\delta-q}\left[\dot{H}(f(\tau)) + \delta H(f(\tau))^2\right]. \end{aligned} \tag{2.17}$$

Since $a(t)$ is assumed to satisfy the scale factor equation (2.1), (2.16) can be written

$$\begin{aligned} Y''(\tau) &= \frac{q}{\theta^2}a(f(\tau))^{2\delta-q}\left[-\varepsilon\dot{\phi}(f(\tau))^2 + \sum_{i=0}^{N}\frac{G_i(f(\tau))}{a(f(\tau)))^{A_i}}\right] \\ &= -\frac{q\varepsilon}{\theta^2}\dot{\phi}(f(\tau))^2 a(f(\tau))^{2\delta-2q}a(f(\tau))^q + \sum_{i=0}^{N}\frac{\frac{q}{\theta^2}G_i(f(\tau))}{a(f(\tau))^{A_i+q-2\delta}}. \end{aligned} \tag{2.18}$$

8

Differentiating the definition (2.12) of $\varphi(\tau)$ and again using (2.15) we have

$$\varphi'(\tau) = \dot{\phi}(f(\tau))f'(\tau) = \frac{1}{\theta}\dot{\phi}(f(\tau))a(f(\tau))^{\delta-q}, \tag{2.19}$$

so that the definition (2.10) of $Q(\tau)$ can be written as

$$Q(\tau) = \frac{q\varepsilon}{\theta^2}\dot{\phi}(f(\tau))^2 a(f(\tau))^{2\delta-2q}. \tag{2.20}$$

By (2.20) and the definitions (2.9), (2.11) and (2.8) of $Y(\tau), \lambda_i(\tau)$ and $B_i \in \mathbb{R}$ respectively, (2.18) becomes

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \sum_{i=0}^{N} \frac{\lambda_i(\tau)}{Y(\tau)^{B_i}}. \tag{2.21}$$

To prove the converse statement, differentiate the definition (2.3) of $a(t)$ and use the definition (2.13) of $\tau(t)$ to obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
\dot{a}(t) &= \frac{1}{q}Y(\tau(t))^{(1-q)/q}Y'(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t) \\
&= \frac{\theta}{q}Y(\tau(t))^{(1-\delta)/q}Y'(\tau(t)).
\end{aligned} \tag{2.22}$$

Dividing by $a(t)$, we have that

$$H(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}(t)}{a(t)} = \frac{\theta}{q}Y'(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t))^{-\delta/q}. \tag{2.23}$$

Differentiating (2.23) and again using the definition (2.13) of $\tau(t)$, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
\dot{H}(t) &= \frac{\theta}{q}\dot{\tau}(t)\left[Y''(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t))^{-\delta/q} - \frac{\delta}{q}Y'(\tau(t))^2Y(\tau(t))^{-(\delta+q)/q}\right] \\
&= \frac{\theta^2}{q}Y(\tau(t))^{(q-\delta)/q}\left[Y''(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t))^{-\delta/q} - \frac{\delta}{q}Y'(\tau(t))^2Y(\tau(t))^{-(\delta+q)/q}\right] \\
&= \frac{\theta^2}{q}Y(\tau(t))^{(q-2\delta)/q}Y''(\tau) - \frac{\delta\theta^2}{q^2}Y'(\tau(t))^2Y(\tau(t))^{-2\delta/q}.
\end{aligned} \tag{2.24}$$

9

Since $Y(\tau)$ is assumed to satisfy the generalized EMP equation (2.2), equation (2.24) can be written as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{H}(t) &= \frac{\theta^2}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{(q-2\delta)/q} \left[-Q(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t)) + \sum_{i=0}^{N} \frac{\lambda_i(\tau(t))}{Y(\tau(t))^{B_i}} \right] \\
&\quad - \frac{\delta\theta^2}{q^2} Y'(\tau(t))^2 Y(\tau(t))^{-2\delta/q} \\
&= -\frac{\theta^2}{q} Q(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t))^{2(q-\delta)/q} + \sum_{i=0}^{N} \frac{\frac{\theta^2}{q}\lambda_i(\tau(t))}{Y(\tau(t))^{(q(B_i-1)+2\delta)/q}} \\
&\quad - \frac{\delta\theta^2}{q^2} Y'(\tau(t))^2 Y(\tau(t))^{-2\delta/q}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.25}
$$

By definitions (2.6) and (2.13) of $\phi(t)$ and $\tau(t)$ respectively, we have that

$$
\dot{\phi}(t) = \varphi'(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta\varphi'(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t))^{(q-\delta)/q}.
\tag{2.26}
$$

Using definition (2.4) of $\varphi(\tau)$ in terms of $Q(\tau)$ and squaring (2.26), we have

$$
\dot{\phi}(t)^2 = \frac{\theta^2}{q\varepsilon} Q(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t))^{2(q-\delta)/q}.
\tag{2.27}
$$

This shows that the first term in (2.25) is equal to $-\varepsilon\dot{\phi}(t)^2$. Noting that by (2.23) the last term of (2.25) is equal to $-\delta H(t)^2$, and using definitions (2.3), (2.5) and (2.14) of $a(t), G_i(t)$ and A_i respectively, (2.25) becomes

$$
\dot{H}(t) = -\varepsilon\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + \sum_{i=0}^{N} \frac{G_i(t)}{a(t)^{A_i}} - \delta H(t)^2.
\tag{2.28}
$$

This proves the theorem.

$\diamond$

2.2 Generalized EMP and Schrödinger-type equations

We now record a mapping between any solution set $(Y(\tau), Q(\tau), \lambda(\tau), \lambda_1(\tau),$ $\ldots, \lambda_N(\tau))$ of the generalized EMP equation

$$
Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{\lambda(\tau)}{Y(\tau)^B} + \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{\lambda_i(\tau)}{Y(\tau)^{B_i}}
\tag{2.29}
$$

10

for $B \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{-1, 1\}, B_i \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{-1\}, N \in \mathbb{N}$, and a corresponding solution set $(u(\sigma), E(\sigma), P(\sigma), \ F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma))$ of what we will call a non-linear Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E(\sigma) - P(\sigma)]u(\sigma) = \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{F_i(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{C_i}} \tag{2.30}$$

for $C_i \in \mathbb{R}$.

In general, the Schrödinger-type equation (2.30) contains one less non-linear term than the generalized EMP equation (2.29). Therefore although the correspondence does hold when $\lambda = \lambda_i = E = 0$, the point is that a nonzero nonlinear term $\lambda(\tau)/Y(\tau)^B$ in (2.29) transforms to the linear term $E(\sigma)u(\sigma)$ in (2.30). Therefore the "Schrödinger" nature of this latter equation is most apparent when $\lambda_i(\tau) = 0$ for $1 \le i \le N$ and when the function $\lambda(\tau) = \lambda$ is constant in (2.29). In this case (as we will see in this section), solutions to the generalized EMP

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{\lambda}{Y(\tau)^B} \tag{2.31}$$

correspond to solutions of a one-dimensional *linear* Schrödinger equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E - P(\sigma)]u(\sigma) = 0 \tag{2.32}$$

for E constant. This slightly generalizes a result of F. Williams in which solutions of a classical EMP (that is, for $B = 3$ in (2.31)) are shown to be in correspondence with solutions of a linear Schrödinger equation (2.32). One can also refer to the paper of W. Milne [25].

The dictionary between solutions to (2.29) and (2.30) is as follows:

$$Y(\tau(t))^{B-1} = u(\sigma(t))^{-2} \tag{2.33}$$

$$\vartheta^2(B-1)Q(\tau(t))^{(B-1)/(B+1)} = 2P(\sigma(t))u(\sigma(t))^2 \tag{2.34}$$

$$\vartheta^2(B-1)\lambda(\tau(t)) = 2E(\sigma(t)) \tag{2.35}$$

$$\vartheta^2(B-1)\lambda_i(\tau(t)) = 2F_i(\sigma(t)) \tag{2.36}$$

11

where $\tau_\sigma(t)$ and $\sigma(t)$ are solutions to the differential equations

$$\dot{\tau}_\sigma(t) = \sqrt{\vartheta} Y(\tau_\sigma(t))^{\frac{1}{4}(B+1)} \tag{2.37}$$

and

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\vartheta}} u(\sigma(t))^{\frac{1}{2}(B+1)/(B-1)} \tag{2.38}$$

respectively, for some $\vartheta > 0$. Also the powers B_i and C_i in (2.29) and (2.30) respectively, are related by the equation

$$C_i = 1 - 2\frac{(B_i - 1)}{(B - 1)}. \tag{2.39}$$

Note that by (2.33), (2.37) and (2.38), we have

$$\dot{\tau}_\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{\dot{\sigma}(t)}. \tag{2.40}$$

We notate the function $\tau_\sigma(t)$ with the subscript σ in order to distinguish it from the separate quantity $\tau(t)$ which appears in section 2.1.

Theorem 2.2.1 *Suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $Y(\tau) > 0$ and also functions $Q(\tau), \lambda(\tau), \lambda_1(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ which satisfy the generalized EMP equation (2.29) for some $B \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{-1, 1\}, B_i \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{-1\}$ and $N \in \mathbb{N}$. In order to construct a set of functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation (2.30), begin by solving for the function $\tau_\sigma(t)$ in (2.37) (for any $\vartheta > 0$) and then solve (2.40) for $\sigma(t)$. Let $g(\sigma)$ denote the inverse of $\sigma(t)$ (which exists since $\dot{\sigma}(t) > 0$ for all t). Then by (2.33)-(2.36) the following functions solve the Schrödinger-type equation (2.30):*

$$u(\sigma) = Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{\frac{1}{2}(1-B)} \tag{2.41}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{\vartheta^2}{2}(B-1)Q(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{B+1} \tag{2.42}$$

$$E(\sigma) = \frac{\vartheta^2}{2}(B-1)\lambda(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))) \tag{2.43}$$

$$F_i(\sigma) = \frac{\vartheta^2}{2}(1-B)\lambda_i(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))) \tag{2.44}$$

12

for C_i as in (2.39).

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$ and also functions $E(\sigma), P(\sigma), F_i(\sigma)$ which satisfy the Schrödinger-type equation (2.30) for some $C_i \in \mathbb{R}$ and $N \in \mathbb{N}$. In order to construct functions which solve (2.29), first solve (2.38) for $\sigma(t)$ and for any constants $\vartheta > 0$ and $B \in \mathbb{R} \backslash \{-1, 1\}$. Then solve for $\tau_\sigma(t)$ in (2.40) and let $f_\sigma(\tau)$ denote its inverse (which exists since $\dot{\tau}_\sigma(t) > 0$ for all t). By (2.33)-(2.36), the functions

$$Y(\tau) = u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{2/(1-B)} \tag{2.45}$$

$$Q(\tau) = \frac{2}{\vartheta^2(B-1)} P(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{2(B+1)/(B-1)} \tag{2.46}$$

$$\lambda(\tau) = \frac{2}{\vartheta^2(B-1)} E(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau))) \tag{2.47}$$

$$\lambda_i(\tau) = \frac{2}{\vartheta^2(1-B)} F_i(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau))) \tag{2.48}$$

satisfy the generalized EMP (2.29) for

$$B_i = \frac{1}{2}\left((1-B)C_i + (B+1)\right) \tag{2.49}$$

(by (2.39)).

Proof. To prove the forward statement, we begin by computing $g'(\sigma)$, a quantity that will be required to simplify the derivatives of $u(\sigma)$. Since $g(\sigma(t)) = t$, we differentiate this relation with respect to t and obtain $g'(\sigma(t))\dot{\sigma}(t) = 1$ so that $g'(\sigma) = 1/\dot{\sigma}(g(\sigma)) = \dot{\tau}_\sigma(g(\sigma))$. Therefore by (2.37) we have

$$\dot{\tau}_\sigma(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) = \vartheta \, Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{(B+1)/2}. \tag{2.50}$$

Differentiating the definition (2.41) of $u(\sigma)$ and using (2.50), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
u'(\sigma) &= \frac{1}{2}(1-B)Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{-(B+1)/2}Y'(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))\dot{\tau}_\sigma(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) \\
&= \frac{\vartheta}{2}(1-B)Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{-(B+1)/2+(B+1)/2}Y'(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))) \\
&= \frac{\vartheta}{2}(1-B)Y'(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))). \tag{2.51}
\end{aligned}$$

13

Differentiating again and using (2.50), we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
u''(\sigma) &= \frac{\vartheta}{2}(1-B)Y''(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))\dot{\tau}_\sigma(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) \\
&= \frac{\vartheta^2}{2}(1-B)Y''(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{(B+1)/2}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.52}
$$

Since $Y(\tau)$ is assumed to satisfy the generalized EMP equation (2.29), (2.52) becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
u''(\sigma) &= \frac{\vartheta^2}{2}(1-B)Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{(B+1)/2}\left[-Q(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))\right. \\
&\qquad \left. +\frac{\lambda(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))}{Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^B} + \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{\lambda_i(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))}{Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{B_i}}\right] \\
&= \frac{\vartheta^2}{2}(B-1)Q(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{B+1}Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{(1-B)/2} \\
&\qquad -\frac{\vartheta^2(B-1)\lambda(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))}{2Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{(B-1)/2}} + \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{\vartheta^2(1-B)\lambda_i(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))}{2Y(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))^{B_i-\frac{1}{2}(B+1)}}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.53}
$$

By the definitions (2.41),(2.42), (2.43) and (2.44) of $u(\sigma), P(\sigma), E(\sigma)$ and $F_i(\sigma)$ respectively, we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
u''(\sigma) &= P(\sigma)u(\sigma) - \frac{E(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{-1}} + \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{F_i(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{\frac{2B_i-(B+1)}{1-B}}}. \\
&= P(\sigma)u(\sigma) - E(\sigma)u(\sigma) + \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{F_i(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{C_i}}
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.54}
$$

for C_i as in (2.39). This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse statement, we will need $f'_\sigma(\tau)$ in order to simplify the derivatives of $Y(\tau)$. Differentiating the relation $f_\sigma(\tau_\sigma(t)) = t$ with respect to t implies $f'_\sigma(\tau_\sigma(t))\dot{\tau}_\sigma(t) = 1$ therefore $f'_\sigma(\tau) = 1/\dot{\tau}_\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)) = \dot{\sigma}(f_\sigma(\tau))$. By (2.38) we can form the useful quantity

$$
\dot{\sigma}(f_\sigma(\tau))f'_\sigma(\tau) = \frac{1}{\vartheta}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{\frac{(B+1)}{(B-1)}}.
\tag{2.55}
$$

14

Now differentiating the definition of $Y(\tau)$ and using (2.55), we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y'(\tau) &= \frac{2}{(1-B)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{\frac{(B+1)}{(1-B)}}u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))\dot{\sigma}(f_\sigma(\tau))f'_\sigma(\tau)\\
&= \frac{2}{\vartheta(1-B)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{\frac{(B+1)}{(1-B)}+\frac{(B+1)}{(B-1)}}u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))\\
&= \frac{2}{\vartheta(1-B)}u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau))).
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.56}
$$

Differentiating $Y'(\tau)$ and again using (2.55), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y''(\tau) &= \frac{2}{\vartheta(1-B)}u''(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))\dot{\sigma}(f_\sigma(\tau))f'_\sigma(\tau)\\
&= \frac{2}{\vartheta^2(1-B)}u''(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{\frac{(B+1)}{(B-1)}}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.57}
$$

Since $u(\sigma)$ is assumed to satisfy the Schrödinger-type equation (2.30), the equation (2.57) can be written as

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y''(\tau) &= \frac{2}{\vartheta^2(1-B)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{(B+1)/(B-1)}\Big[-E(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))\\
&\quad +P(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))+\sum_{i=1}^{N}\frac{F_i(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))}{u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{C_i}}\Big]\\
&= \frac{2E(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))}{\vartheta^2(B-1)u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{-2B/(B-1)}}\\
&\quad -\frac{2}{\vartheta^2(B-1)}P(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{2(B+1)/(B-1)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{2/(1-B)}\\
&\quad +\sum_{i=1}^{N}\frac{2F_i(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))/(1-B)}{\vartheta^2u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)))^{((B-1)C_i-(B+1))/(B-1)}}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.58}
$$

By the definitions (2.45), (2.46), (2.47) and (2.48) of $Y(\tau), Q(\tau), \lambda(\tau)$ and $\lambda_i(\tau)$ respectively, we obtain

$$
Y''(\tau) = \frac{\lambda(\tau)}{Y(\tau)^B} - Q(\tau)Y(\tau) + \sum_{i=1}^{N}\frac{\lambda_i(\tau)}{Y(\tau)^{B_i}}
\tag{2.59}
$$

for C_i as in (2.39). This proves the theorem.

$\diamond$

2.3 Scale factor and Schrödinger-type equations

By composing the maps in Theorems 2.1.1 and 2.2.1, one can see that a direct reformulation of the scale factor equation

$$\dot{H}(t) + \delta H(t)^2 + \varepsilon \dot{\phi}(t)^2 = \frac{G(t)}{a(t)^A} + \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{G_i(t)}{a(t)^{A_i}} \tag{2.60}$$

(again $H(t) = \dot{a}(t)/a(t)$) in terms of the nonlinear Schrodinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E(\sigma) - P(\sigma)]u(\sigma) = \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{F_i(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{C_i}} \tag{2.61}$$

is possible by identifying B_0 in Theorem 2.1.1 with B in Theorem 2.2.1. The theorem below is exactly the resulting statement. As we noted in Section 2.2, this reformulation of the scale factor equation (2.60) in terms of the non-linear Schrödinger-type equation (2.61) will have one less non-linear term than the alternate generalized EMP reformulation seen in Section 2.1.

For the forward implication of the theorem in this section, composing the respective notations of Theorems 2.1.1 and 2.2.1 is convenient. However this is not true for the converse implication, in which we now use new notation which is equivalent to identifying $(A_0 - 2\delta)/q$ and $A_0/(q - \delta)$ of Theorem 2.1.1 with $n/3$ and m, respectively, used here. Here we also rename A_0 of Theorem 2.1.1 to just A.

In summary, the dictionary between functions which solve (2.60) and functions which solve (2.61) is as follows:

$$a(f(\tau_\sigma(t)))^{(A-2\delta)} = u(\sigma(t))^{-2} \tag{2.62}$$

$$\varepsilon(A - 2\delta)\psi'(\sigma)^2 = 2P(\sigma) \tag{2.63}$$

$$(A - 2\delta)\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}G(f(\tau_\sigma(t))) = 2E(\sigma(t)) \tag{2.64}$$

$$(2\delta - A)\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}G_i(f(\tau_\sigma(t))) = 2F_i(\sigma(t)) \tag{2.65}$$

where $f(\tau)$ is the inverse function of $\tau(t)$ and each of $\tau(t)$ and $\sigma(t)$ are solutions to the differential equations

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta a(t)^{q-\delta}, \tag{2.66}$$

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\vartheta}} u(\sigma(t))^{(n+6)/2n} \tag{2.67}$$

respectively for some constants $\theta, \vartheta > 0, q \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{\delta\}$ and $n \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$. Also ϕ and ψ are related by the composition

$$\phi(f(\tau_\sigma(t))) = \psi(\sigma(t)), \tag{2.68}$$

and the powers A_i and C_i in (2.60) and (2.61) respectively, are related by the equation

$$C_i = 1 - 2\frac{(A_i - 2\delta)}{(A - 2\delta)}. \tag{2.69}$$

In addition, depending on which direction one is mapping solutions, it may be convenient to define $\tau_\sigma(t)$ as the solution to either

$$\dot{\tau}_\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{\dot{\sigma}(t)} \tag{2.70}$$

or equivalently by (2.67), (2.62) and (2.66),

$$\dot{\tau}_\sigma(t) = \dot{\tau}(f(\tau_\sigma(t)))^{(A+2q-2\delta)/4(q-\delta)}. \tag{2.71}$$

Theorem 2.3.1 *Suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $a(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ which satisfy the scale factor equation (2.60) for some $N \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\delta, \varepsilon, A, A_1, \ldots, A_N \in \mathbb{R}$ where $A \neq 2\delta$. In order to construct a set of functions which solve the non-linear Schrödinger-type equation (2.61), begin by solving for $\tau(t)$ in the differential equation (2.66) for any constants $\theta > 0$ and $q \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{\delta\}$. Let $f(\tau)$ denote the inverse of $\tau(t)$ (which exists since $\dot{\tau}(t) > 0$ for all t), find the solution $\tau_\sigma(t)$ to (2.71) and*

17

then find $\sigma(t)$ which solves (2.70). Let $g(\sigma)$ to denote the inverse function of $\sigma(t)$ (which exists since $\dot{\tau}(t) > 0$ for all t). Then by (2.62)-(2.65) the following functions solve the Schrödinger-type equation (2.61):

$$u(\sigma) = a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{(2\delta - A)/2} \tag{2.72}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{1}{2}\varepsilon(A - 2\delta)\psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{2.73}$$

$$E(\sigma) = \frac{1}{2}(A - 2\delta)\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}G(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))) \tag{2.74}$$

$$F_i(\sigma) = \frac{1}{2}(2\delta - A)\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}G_i(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))) \tag{2.75}$$

for C_i as in (2.69) and for

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))) \tag{2.76}$$

(by (2.68)).

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$, a continuous function $P(\sigma)$ and also functions $E(\sigma), F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ which satisfy the Schrödinger-type equation (2.61) for some $C_i \in \mathbb{R}$, and $N \in \mathbb{N}$. In order to construct functions which solve the scale factor equation (2.60), begin by solving for $\sigma(t)$ in the differential equation (2.67) for some $\vartheta > 0$ and $n \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$. Then find a solution $\tau_\sigma(t)$ to (2.70) and let $f_\sigma(\tau)$ denote the inverse of $\tau_\sigma(t)$ (which exists since $\dot{\sigma}(t) > 0$ for all t). Next find functions $\tau(t)$ and $\psi(\sigma)$ which solve the differential equations

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \dot{\tau}_\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))^{4/(m+2)} \tag{2.77}$$

and

$$\psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{6}{\varepsilon q n}P(\sigma) \tag{2.78}$$

respectively, for any $m \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{-2\}$ and $\varepsilon, q \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ (these equations are obtained by writing (2.71) and (2.63) in the converse notation). Then by (2.62)-(2.65), the

following functions solve the scale factor equation (2.60):

$$a(t) = u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{-6/qn} \tag{2.79}$$

$$\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))) \tag{2.80}$$

$$G(t) = \frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}E(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))) \tag{2.81}$$

$$G_i(t) = -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}F_i(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))) \tag{2.82}$$

for coefficient

$$\delta = \frac{q(3m-n)}{3(m+2)} \tag{2.83}$$

and for powers

$$A = \frac{qm(n+6)}{3(2+m)}, \qquad A_i = \frac{q}{6}\left(\frac{(nm-2n+12m)}{(m+2)} - nC_i\right) \tag{2.84}$$

(by (2.69) in the converse notation).

Proof. To prove the forward implication, we first compute $f'(\tau)$ and $g'(\sigma)$. Differentiating the relation $f(\tau(t)) = t$ with respect to t gives $f'(\tau(t))\dot\tau(t) = 1$ so that $f'(\tau) = 1/\dot\tau(f(\tau))$. Therefore by (2.66), we have

$$f'(\tau) = \frac{1}{\theta}a(f(\tau))^{\delta-q}. \tag{2.85}$$

Similarly $g(\sigma(t)) = t$ implies $g'(\sigma(t))\dot\sigma(t) = 1$ so that $g'(\sigma) = 1/\dot\sigma(g(\sigma)) = \dot\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))$, and then by (2.71) and (2.66) we obtain

$$g'(\sigma) = \dot\tau(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{(A+2q-2\delta)/4(q-\delta)} \tag{2.86}$$

$$= \theta^{(A+2q-2\delta)/4(q-\delta)}a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{(A+2q-2\delta)/4}.$$

By (2.85), (2.86) and (2.71), we find that

$$f'(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))\dot\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) = \theta^{(A+2q-2\delta)/2(q-\delta)-1}a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{(A+2q-2\delta)/2+\delta-q}$$

$$= \theta^{A/2(q-\delta)}a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{A/2}. \tag{2.87}$$

19

Differentiating the definition (2.72) of $u(\sigma)$ and using (2.87), we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
u'(\sigma) &= \frac{1}{2}(2\delta - A)a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{(2\delta - A - 2)/2}\dot{a}(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))) \\
&\qquad \cdot f'(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))\dot{\tau}_\sigma(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) \\
&= \frac{1}{2}(2\delta - A)\theta^{A/2(q-\delta)}\dot{a}(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{\delta - 1} \\
&= \frac{1}{2}(2\delta - A)\theta^{A/2(q-\delta)}H(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{\delta} \qquad (2.88)
\end{aligned}
$$

for $H(t) \overset{def.}{=} \dot{a}(t)/a(t)$. Differentiating $u'(\sigma)$ and using (2.87) and the assumed scale factor equation (2.60), the second derivative of u is

$$
\begin{aligned}
u''(\sigma) &= \frac{1}{2}(2\delta - A)\theta^{A/2(q-\delta)}f'(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma)))\dot{\tau}_\sigma(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) \\
&\qquad \cdot \left[\dot{H}(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{\delta} + \delta H(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^2 a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{\delta}\right] \\
&= \frac{1}{2}(2\delta - A)\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{A/2+\delta} \\
&\qquad \cdot \left[-\varepsilon\dot{\phi}(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^2 + \frac{G(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))}{a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^A} + \sum_{i=1}^{N}\frac{G_i(t)}{a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{A_i}}\right] \\
&= \frac{1}{2}(A - 2\delta)\varepsilon\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{A/2+\delta}\dot{\phi}(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^2 \\
&\qquad + \frac{1}{2}(2\delta - A)\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}G(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{\delta - A/2} \\
&\qquad + \frac{1}{2}(2\delta - A)\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}\sum_{i=1}^{N}\frac{G_i(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))}{a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{(2A_i - A - 2\delta)/2}}. \qquad (2.89)
\end{aligned}
$$

Differentiating the definition (2.76) of $\psi(\sigma)$ and using (2.87) we see that

$$
\psi'(\sigma) = \theta^{A/2(q-\delta)}\dot{\phi}(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{A/2} \qquad (2.90)
$$

so that by (2.73), we can write $P(\sigma)$ as

$$
P(\sigma) = \frac{1}{2}\varepsilon(A - 2\delta)\theta^{A/(q-\delta)}\dot{\phi}(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^2 a(f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))))^{A}. \qquad (2.91)
$$

By (2.91) and the definitions (2.72), (2.74) and (2.75) of $u(\sigma), E(\sigma)$ and $F_i(\sigma)$

respectively, (2.89) becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
u''(\sigma) &= P(\sigma)u(\sigma) - E(\sigma)u(\sigma) + \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{F_i(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{(2A_i - A - 2\delta)/(2\delta - A)}} \\
&= P(\sigma)u(\sigma) - E(\sigma)u(\sigma) + \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{F_i(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{C_i}}
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.92}
$$

for C_i as in (2.69). This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse statement, we will need the function $f'_\sigma(\tau)$. Differentiating the relation $f_\sigma(\tau_\sigma(t)) = t$ with respect to t implies that $f'_\sigma(\tau_\sigma(t))\dot\tau_\sigma(t) = 1$ and so we have $f'_\sigma(\tau) = 1/\dot\tau_\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau)) = \dot\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau))$. Therefore by (2.77) and (2.70), we obtain the useful quantity

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))f'_\sigma(\tau(t))\dot\tau(t) &= \dot\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))^2 \dot\tau_\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))^{4/(m+2)} \\
&= \dot\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))^2 \dot\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))^{-4/(m+2)} \\
&= \dot\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))^{2m/(m+2)}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.93}
$$

Using (2.67) to write this in terms of $u(\sigma)$, we have

$$
\dot\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))f'_\sigma(\tau(t))\dot\tau(t) = \vartheta^{-m/(m+2)} u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}}.
\tag{2.94}
$$

Differentiating definition (2.79) of $a(t)$ gives

$$
\dot a(t) = -\frac{6}{qn} u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{-(6+qn)/qn} u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))\dot\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))f'_\sigma(\tau(t))\dot\tau(t).
\tag{2.95}
$$

Dividing by $a(t) = u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{-6/qn}$ and using (2.94), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
H(t) &= -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-m/(m+2)} u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))) u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}-1} \\
&= -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-m/(m+2)} u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))) u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}}
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.96}
$$

for $H(t) \overset{def.}{=} \dot a(t)/a(t)$ as usual. Differentiating $H(t)$ and again using (2.94), we get

21

that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{H}(t) &= -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-m/(m+2)}\dot{\sigma}(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))f'_\sigma(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t)\cdot \\
&\quad \left[u''(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}}\right. \\
&\quad \left.+\frac{2(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^2 u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}-1}\right] \\
&= -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u''(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{(12m-2n+mn)/n(m+2)} \\
&\quad -\frac{12(3m-n)}{qn^2(m+2)}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^2 u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{4(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}},
\end{aligned}
$$

$$(2.97)$$

where we have simplified the powers of $u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))$ for the first and second terms

by adding

$$
\frac{m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}+\frac{2(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}=\frac{12m-2n+mn}{n(m+2)} \tag{2.98}
$$

and

$$
\frac{m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}+\frac{2(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}-1=\frac{4(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}, \tag{2.99}
$$

respectively. Since $u(\sigma)$ is assumed to satisfy the Schrödinger-type equation (2.61),

$\dot{H}$ in (2.97) now becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{H}(t) &= -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{(12m-2n+mn)/n(m+2)}\cdot \\
&\quad [P(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))-E(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))) \\
&\quad +\sum_{n=1}^{N}\frac{F_i(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))}{u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{C_i}}\Bigg] \\
&\quad -\frac{12(3m-n)}{qn^2(m+2)}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^2 u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{4(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}}.
\end{aligned}
$$

$$(2.100)$$

Multiplying out the terms, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{H}(t) &= -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}}P(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))) \\
&\quad +\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}}E(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))
\end{aligned}
$$

$$-\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}\sum_{n=1}^{N}\frac{F_i(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))}{u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{C_i+(2n-12m-mn)/n(m+2)}}$$

$$-\frac{12(3m-n)}{qn^2(m+2)}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau_\sigma(t))))^2u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{4(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}}$$

$$(2.101)$$

where for the first two terms, we have simplified the powers of u by adding

$$\frac{12m-2n+mn}{n(m+2)}+1=\frac{2m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}. \qquad (2.102)$$

By the definition (2.83) of the constant δ, and by the computation (2.96) of H in terms of u, we have that

$$\delta H(t)^2=\frac{12(3m-n)}{qn^2(m+2)}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^2u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{4(3m-n)}{n(m+2)}}. \qquad (2.103)$$

This shows that the last term in (2.101) is equal to $-\delta H(t)^2$ so that we have

$$\begin{aligned}
\dot{H}(t)+\delta H(t)^2 &= -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}}P(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))\\
&\quad +\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}}E(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))\\
&\quad -\frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}\sum_{n=1}^{N}\frac{F_i(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))}{u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{C_i+(2n-12m-mn)/n(m+2)}}.
\end{aligned}$$

$$(2.104)$$

Differentiating the definition (2.80) of $\phi(t)$ and using (2.94), we have that

$$\begin{aligned}
\dot{\phi}(t) &= \psi'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))\dot{\sigma}(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))f_\sigma'(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t)\\
&= \vartheta^{-m/(m+2)}u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}}\psi'(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))). \qquad (2.105)
\end{aligned}$$

Using the definition (2.78) of $\psi(\sigma)$ in terms of $P(\sigma)$ and squaring (2.105), we obtain

$$\dot{\phi}(t)^2 = \frac{6}{\varepsilon qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)}P(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}}. \qquad (2.106)$$

23

This shows that the first term in (2.104) is equal to $-\varepsilon\dot{\phi}(t)^2$ so that

$$\dot{H}(t) + \delta H(t)^2 = -\varepsilon\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + \frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)} u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{\frac{2m(n+6)}{n(m+2)}} E(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))$$

$$- \frac{6}{qn}\vartheta^{-2m/(m+2)} \sum_{n=1}^{N} \frac{F_i(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))}{u(\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))))^{C_i+(2n-12m-mn)/n(m+2)}}.$$

$$(2.107)$$

Now utilizing the definitions (2.79), (2.81) and (2.82) of $a(t), G(t)$ and $G_i(t)$ respectively, (2.107) becomes

$$\dot{H}(t) + \delta H(t)^2 = -\varepsilon\dot{\phi}^2 + \frac{G(t)}{a(t)^{\frac{qm(n+6)}{3(m+2)}}} + \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{G_i(t)}{a(t)^{-\frac{qn}{6}C_i - q(2n-12m-mn)/6(m+2)}}$$

$$= -\varepsilon\dot{\phi}^2 + \frac{G(t)}{a(t)^A} + \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{G_i(t)}{a(t)^{A_i}}, \qquad (2.108)$$

which proves the theorem for A and A_i as in (2.124). $\diamond$

The statement of this theorem would have been much simpler if we were able to choose $\tau(t) = \tau_\sigma(t)$, since then many compositions of functions would cancel. In fact, such cancellations would make the use of $\tau(t)$ obsolete, leaving only $\sigma(t)$ and its inverse $g(\sigma)$ to be required for the reparameterization which takes place in the translation between the functions $a(t)$ and $u(\sigma)$. By (2.71) in the forward direction or equivalently (2.77) in the converse, $\dot{\tau}(t) = \dot{\tau}_\sigma(t)$ for $(A + 2q - 2\delta)/4(q - \delta) = 1$ and $4/(m + 2) = 1$ respectively. This corresponds to the choice of parameter $q = A/2 + \delta$, or equivalently $m = 2$ and $n = 6$ in the converse notation. Also for this choice $\delta = 0$ by (2.83). As stated above, the theorem only holds for $q \neq \delta = 0$, so the choice $q = A/2 + \delta = A/2$ is only possible for $A \neq 0$. In summary, when $A \neq 0$ and $\delta = 0$, we apply the theorem with $q = A/2$ or equivalently $m = 2, n = 6$ in the converse notation. This will allow us to take the integration constant zero when integrating the relation $\dot{\tau}(t) = \dot{\tau}_\sigma(t)$ so that $\tau(t) = \tau_\sigma(t)$ and the statement of the theorem will become simpler.

24

Therefore in application, the following two versions of the theorem will be useful. If $A \neq 0$ and $\delta = 0$ then the theorem will be implemented with $q = A/2, m = 2, n = 6$ and $\tau(t) = \tau_\sigma(t)$. If $A = 0$ and $\delta \neq 0$ then in the converse notation $m = 0$ and by the comments on notation at the beginning of this section, $q = -6\delta/n$ and the theorem also takes a simpler form in this case. In particular by integrating (2.87) and (2.93) with $A = m = 0$, we have that $f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))) = \sigma + t_0$ and $\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))) = t - t_0$ for some constant $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ (If A, δ are both nonzero then the theorem would be implemented as-is).

Also in the statement of the above theorem, one can show that the constants θ and ϑ are related by $\vartheta = \theta^{(A+2q-2\delta)/2(q-\delta)}$ or equivalently $\theta = \vartheta^{2/(m+2)}$ in the converse notation. This was, in fact, why we chose to state the theorem more simply by using two separate constants θ and ϑ for the forward and converse implications respectively - but this is not necessary in the case of the first $\delta = 0$ corollary since $q = A/2$ implies $\vartheta = \theta^2$.

Corollary 2.3.1 $(A \neq 0, \delta = 0 \stackrel{choose}{\to} q = A/2, \tau_\sigma(t) = \tau(t) \Rightarrow m = 2, n = 6, \vartheta = \theta^2)$ *Suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $a(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ which satisfy the scale factor equation*

$$\dot{H}(t) + \varepsilon\dot{\phi}(t)^2 = \frac{G(t)}{a(t)^A} + \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{G_i(t)}{a(t)^{A_i}} \tag{2.109}$$

for some $N \in \mathbb{N}$ and $A \neq 0, \varepsilon, A_1, \ldots, A_N \in \mathbb{R}$ ($\dot{H}(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \dot{a}(t)/a(t)$). In order to construct a set of functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E(\sigma) - P(\sigma)]u(\sigma) = \sum_{i=1}^{N} \frac{F_i(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{C_i}}, \tag{2.110}$$

begin by solving for $\sigma(t)$ in the differential equation

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta}a(t)^{-A/2} \tag{2.111}$$

25

for some $\theta > 0$. Now allow $g(\sigma)$ to denote the inverse function of $\sigma(t)$ (which exists since $\dot{\sigma}(t) > 0$ for all t). Then the following functions solve the Schrödinger-type equation (2.110):

$$u(\sigma) = a(g(\sigma))^{-A/2} \tag{2.112}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{\varepsilon A}{2}\psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{2.113}$$

$$E(\sigma) = \frac{\theta^2 A}{2}G(g(\sigma)) \tag{2.114}$$

$$F_i(\sigma) = -\frac{\theta^2 A}{2}G_i(g(\sigma)) \tag{2.115}$$

for

$$C_i = 1 - 2\frac{A_i}{A}, 1 \le i \le N \tag{2.116}$$

and

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(g(\sigma)). \tag{2.117}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$ and also functions $E(\sigma), P(\sigma), F_1(\sigma), \dots, F_N(\sigma)$ which satisfy the Schrödinger-type equation (2.110) for some $C_i \in \mathbb{R}$, and $N \in \mathbb{N}$. In order to construct functions which solve the scale factor equation (2.109), begin by solving for $\sigma(t)$ in the differential equation

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta}u(\sigma(t)) \tag{2.118}$$

for some $\theta > 0$. Next find a function $\psi(\sigma)$ which solves the differential equation

$$\psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{2}{\varepsilon A}P(\sigma) \tag{2.119}$$

for any $\varepsilon, A \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$. Then the following functions solve the scale factor equation

(2.109):

$$a(t) = u(\sigma(t))^{-2/A} \tag{2.120}$$

$$\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t))) \tag{2.121}$$

$$G(t) = \frac{2}{A\theta^2}E(\sigma(t)) \tag{2.122}$$

$$G_i(t) = -\frac{2}{A\theta^2}F_i(\sigma(t)) \tag{2.123}$$

for

$$A_i = \frac{A}{2}(1 - C_i), 1 \leq i \leq N. \tag{2.124}$$

Corollary 2.3.2 $\left(A = 0, \delta \neq 0 \Rightarrow -\frac{qn}{6} = \delta, m = 0 \Rightarrow f(\tau_\sigma(g(\sigma))) = \sigma + t_0, \sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t))) = t - t_0\right)$ *Suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $a(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ which satisfy the scale factor equation*

$$\dot{H}(t) + \delta H(t)^2 + \varepsilon\dot{\phi}(t)^2 = G(t) + \sum_{i=1}^{N}\frac{G_i(t)}{a(t)^{A_i}} \tag{2.125}$$

for some $N \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\delta \neq 0, \varepsilon, A_1, \ldots, A_N \in \mathbb{R}$ (where as usual, $H(t) \overset{def.}{=} \dot{a}(t)/a(t)$). Then the functions

$$u(\sigma) = a(\sigma + t_0)^\delta \tag{2.126}$$

$$P(\sigma) = -\varepsilon\delta\psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{2.127}$$

$$E(\sigma) = -\delta G(\sigma + t_0) \tag{2.128}$$

$$F_i(\sigma) = \delta G_i(\sigma + t_0) \tag{2.129}$$

solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E(\sigma) - P(\sigma)]u(\sigma) = \sum_{i=1}^{N}\frac{F_i(\sigma)}{u(\sigma)^{C_i}} \tag{2.130}$$

for

$$C_i = \frac{A_i}{\delta} - 1, 1 \leq i \leq N \tag{2.131}$$

and

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(\sigma + t_0). \tag{2.132}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$ and also functions $E(\sigma), P(\sigma), F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ which satisfy the Schrödinger-type equation (2.130) for some $C_i \in \mathbb{R}$ and $N \in \mathbb{N}$. For $\psi(\sigma)$ such that

$$\psi'(\sigma)^2 = -\frac{1}{\varepsilon\delta}P(\sigma) \tag{2.133}$$

for any $\varepsilon, \delta \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$, the following functions solve the scale factor equation (2.125):

$$
\begin{aligned}
a(t) &= u(t - t_0)^{1/\delta} & (2.134)\\
\phi(t) &= \psi(t - t_0) & (2.135)\\
G(t) &= -\frac{1}{\delta}E(t - t_0) & (2.136)\\
G_i(t) &= \frac{1}{\delta}F_i(t - t_0) & (2.137)
\end{aligned}
$$

for

$$A_i = \delta\left(1 + C_i\right), 1 \leq i \leq N. \tag{2.138}$$

C H A P T E R   3

REFORMULATIONS OF THE FRIEDMANN -

ROBERTSON - LEMAÎTRE - WALKER MODEL

This cosmological model assumes that the $d+1$-dimensional spacetime is both homogeneous and isotropic, resulting in a metric of the form

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + a(t)^2 \left(\frac{dr^2}{1 - kr^2} + r^2 d\Omega_{d-1}^2 \right) \tag{3.1}$$

where $a(t)$ is the scale factor, $k \in \{-1, 0, 1\}$ is the curvature parameter and

$$d\Omega_{d-1}^2 = d\theta_1^2 + \sin^2 \theta_1 d\theta_2^2 + \cdots + \sin^2 \theta_1 \cdots \sin^2 \theta_{d-2} d\theta_{d-1}^2. \tag{3.2}$$

In this section, we take the energy density and pressure in equation (1.7) to be

$$\rho(t) = \sum_{i=1}^{M} \frac{D_i(t)}{a(t)^{n_i}} + \rho'(t) \tag{3.3}$$

and

$$p(t) = \sum_{i=1}^{M} \frac{(n_i - d) D_i(t)}{da(t)^{n_i}} + p'(t) \tag{3.4}$$

respectively, for some $n_i \in \mathbb{R}$ and $1 \leq i \leq M$. The nontrivial and distinct Einstein's equations $g^{ij} G_{ij} = -\kappa g^{ij} T_{ij} + \Lambda$ are the $(i, j) = (0, 0)$ and $(i, j) = (1, 1)$ equations.

Dividing by $(d-1)$, these equations are

$$\frac{d}{2}H^2(t) + \frac{dk}{2a(t)^2} \stackrel{(i)}{=} \frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + V(\phi(t)) + \sum_{i=1}^{M}\frac{D_i(t)}{a(t)^{n_i}} + \rho'(t)\right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)}$$

(3.5)

$$\dot{H}(t) + \frac{d}{2}H(t)^2 + \frac{(d-2)k}{2a(t)^2} \stackrel{(ii)}{=} -\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 - V(\phi(t)) + \sum_{i=1}^{M}\frac{(n_i-d)D_i(t)}{da(t)^{n_i}}\right.$$
$$\left. + p'(t)\right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)}$$

where $H(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}(t)}{a(t)}$.

3.1 In terms of a Generalized EMP

Theorem 3.1.1 *Suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $a(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $D_i(t), \rho'(t), p'(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(i), (ii)$ in (3.5) for some $k, n_1, \ldots, n_M, \Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0,1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ and $M, M_2 \in \mathbb{N}$. If $f(\tau)$ is the inverse of a function $\tau(t)$ which satisfies*

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta a(t)^q \tag{3.6}$$

for some $\theta > 0$ and $q \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$, then

$$Y(\tau) = a(f(\tau))^q \qquad and \qquad Q(\tau) = \frac{q\kappa}{(d-1)}\varphi'(\tau)^2 \tag{3.7}$$

solve the generalized EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \tag{3.8}$$
$$\frac{qk}{\theta^2 Y(\tau)^{(2+q)/q}} - \sum_{i=1}^{M}\frac{qn_i\kappa D_i(\tau)}{\theta^2 d(d-1)Y(\tau)^{(n_i+q)/q}} - \frac{q\kappa(\varrho(\tau) + p(\tau))}{\theta^2(d-1)Y(\tau)}$$

for

$$\varphi(\tau) = \phi(f(\tau)) \tag{3.9}$$

30

$$\mathcal{D}_i(\tau) = D_i(f(\tau)), \quad 1 \le i \le M \tag{3.10}$$

and

$$\varrho(\tau) = \rho'(f(\tau)), \; \mathrm{p}(\tau) = p'(f(\tau)). \tag{3.11}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $Y(\tau) > 0$, a continuous function $Q(\tau)$, and also functions $\mathcal{D}_i(\tau)$ for $1 \le i \le M, M \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$ which solve (3.8) for some constants $\theta > 0, q, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}, k \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0, 1\}$ and $n_i \in \mathbb{R}$ for $1 \le i \le M$. In order to construct functions which solve $(i), (ii)$, first find $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau)$ which solve the differential equations

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t)) \qquad and \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{q\kappa} Q(\tau). \tag{3.12}$$

Then the functions

$$a(t) \;\; = \;\; Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} \tag{3.13}$$

$$\phi(t) \;\; = \;\; \varphi(\tau(t)) \tag{3.14}$$

$$D_i(t) = \mathcal{D}_i(\tau(t)), \quad 1 \le i \le M \tag{3.15}$$

$$\rho'(t) = \varrho(\tau(t)), \; p'(t) = \mathrm{p}(\tau(t)), \tag{3.16}$$

and

$V(\phi(t))$

$$= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa} \left(\frac{\theta^2(Y')^2}{q^2} + \frac{k}{Y^{2/q}} \right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2} Y^2 (\varphi')^2 - \sum_{i=1}^{M} \frac{\mathcal{D}_i}{Y^{n_i/q}} - \varrho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \tag{3.17}$$

satisfy equations $(i), (ii)$.

Proof. This proof will implement Theorem 2.1.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 1. Theorem 2.1.1 applied to FRLW

In Theorem	substitute	In Theorem	substitute
δ	0	ε	$\kappa/(d-1)$
$G_0(t)$	constant k	A_0	2
$G_i(t), 1 \le i \le M$	$\frac{-n_i\kappa}{d(d-1)}D_i(t)$	A_i	n_i
$G_{M+1}(t)$	$\frac{-\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho'(t)+p'(t))$	A_{M+1}	0
$\lambda_0(\tau)$	constant qk/θ^2	B_0	$(2+q)/q$
$\lambda_i(\tau), 1 \le i \le M$	$\frac{-qn_i\kappa}{\theta^2 d(d-1)}\mathcal{D}_i(\tau)$	B_i	$(n_i+q)/q$
$\lambda_{M+1}(\tau)$	$\frac{-q\kappa}{\theta^2(d-1)}(\varrho(\tau)+\mathrm{p}(\tau))$	B_{M+1}	1

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations (i) and (ii). Subtracting equations $(ii)-(i)$ we obtain

$$\dot{H}(t) - \frac{k}{a(t)^2} = -\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + \sum_{i=1}^{M}\frac{n_i D_i(t)}{da(t)^{n_i}} + (\rho'(t)+p'(t))\right]. \qquad (3.18)$$

This shows that $a(t), \phi(t), D_i(t), \rho'(t)$ and $p'(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Theorem 2.3.1, applied with constants $\epsilon, \varepsilon, N, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 1. Since $\tau(t), Y(\tau), Q(\tau)$ and $\varphi(\tau)$ defined in (3.6), (3.7) and (3.9) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Theorem 2.3.1, by this theorem and by definitions (3.10) and (3.11) of $\mathcal{D}(\tau)$ and $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$, the generalized EMP equation (2.2) holds for constants $B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 1. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the generalized EMP equation (3.8) and we begin by showing that (i) is satisfied. Differentiating definition (3.13) of $a(t)$ and by the definition of $\tau(t)$ in (3.12), we

have that

$$\begin{aligned} \dot{a}(t) &= \frac{1}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{\frac{1}{q}-1} Y'(\tau(t)) \dot{\tau}(t) \\ &= \frac{\theta}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} Y'(\tau(t)). \end{aligned} \tag{3.19}$$

Dividing by $a(t)$ we obtain

$$H(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}(t)}{a(t)} = \frac{\theta}{q} Y'(\tau(t)). \tag{3.20}$$

Differentiating the definition (3.14) of $\phi(t)$ and using definition of $\tau(t)$ in (3.12), we find that

$$\dot{\phi}(t) = \varphi'(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta\varphi'(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t)). \tag{3.21}$$

Using (3.20), (3.21), and the definitions (3.13), (3.15) and (3.16) of $a(t), D_i(t)$ and $\rho'(t)$ respectively, the definition (3.17) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$V(\phi(t)) = \frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(H(t)^2 + \frac{k}{a(t)^2}\right) - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 - \sum_{i=1}^{M}\frac{D_i(t)}{a(t)^{n_i}} - \rho'(t) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{3.22}$$

This shows that (i) holds (that is, the definition of $V(\phi(t))$ was designed to be such that (i) holds).

To conclude the proof we must also show that (ii) holds. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Theorem 2.1.1 holds, applied with constants $N, B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 1. Since $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau), a(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (3.12), (3.13) and (3.14) are consistent with the converse implication of Theorem A.1, applied with δ and ε as in Table 1, by this theorem and by the definitions (3.15) and (3.16) of $D_i(t)$ and $\rho'(t), p'(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.1) holds for constants $\delta, \varepsilon, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 1. That is, we have regained (3.18) which shows that the subtraction of equations (ii)-(i) holds in the converse direction. Now solving (3.22) for $\rho'(t)$ and substituting this into (3.18), we obtain (ii). This proves the theorem. $\diamond$

3.1.1 First reduction to classical EMP: pure scalar field

As a special case we take $\rho' = p' = D_i = 0$ and we choose the parameter $q = 1$. Then Theorem 3.1.1 shows that solving the Einstein equations

$$\frac{d}{2}H^2(t) + \frac{dk}{2a(t)^2} \overset{(i)'}{=} \frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + V(\phi(t))\right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)} \tag{3.23}$$

$$\dot{H}(t) + \frac{d}{2}H(t)^2 + \frac{(d-2)k}{2a(t)^2} \overset{(ii)'}{=} -\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 - V(\phi(t))\right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)}$$

is equivalent to solving the classical EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{k}{\theta^2 Y(\tau)^3} \tag{3.24}$$

for any constant $\theta > 0$. The solutions of $(i)'$, $(ii)'$ and (3.24) are related by

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) \qquad \text{and} \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{\kappa}Q(\tau) \tag{3.25}$$

for $\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t))$ and

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta a(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t)). \tag{3.26}$$

Also in the converse direction, V is taken to be

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(\theta^2(Y')^2 + \frac{k}{Y^2}\right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t). \tag{3.27}$$

Referring to Appendix D for solutions of the classical and corresponding homogeneous EMP equation (3.24), we will use the theorem to compute some exact solutions of Einstein's equations. By comparing (3.26) and (D.5), we note to only consider solutions of (D.5) in Appendix D corresponding to $r_0 = 1$. Also note that $\sigma(t)$ in (D.6) is not relevant in the FRLW model.

Example 1 *For zero curvature $k = 0$ and for $\theta = 1$, we take solution 1 in Table 14 of the homogeneous equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = 0$ with $Q(\tau) = Q_0 > 0$. That is, $Y(\tau) = \cos(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)$ and by (D.8) - (D.10) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{Q_0}}Arctan\left(tanh\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = sech\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)\right) \tag{3.28}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.17) with $\alpha_0 = (d - 1)/\kappa$, we obtain the scalar field

$$\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = 2\sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{\kappa}}Arctan\left(tanh\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)\right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.29}$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.27), (D.11) and (D.10) we get

$$\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}(Y')^2 - \frac{1}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \tag{3.30} \\
&= \frac{(d-1)Q_0}{2\kappa}\left[d\ tanh^2\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)\right) - sech^2\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)\right)\right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned}$$

so that

$$\begin{aligned}
V(w) &= \frac{(d-1)Q_0}{2\kappa}\left[d\ tanh^2\left(2Arctanh\left(tan\left(\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w - \beta_0)\right)\right)\right)\right. \\
&\quad \left. -sech^2\left(2Arctanh\left(tan\left(\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w - \beta_0)\right)\right)\right)\right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.31}
\end{aligned}$$

since

$$\phi^{-1}(w) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{Q_0}}Arctanh\left(tan\left(\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w - \beta_0)\right)\right) + t_0. \tag{3.32}$$

For $Q_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y and Y' both perturbed by .05. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that this solution is stable.

Figure 1. Stability of FRLW Example 1
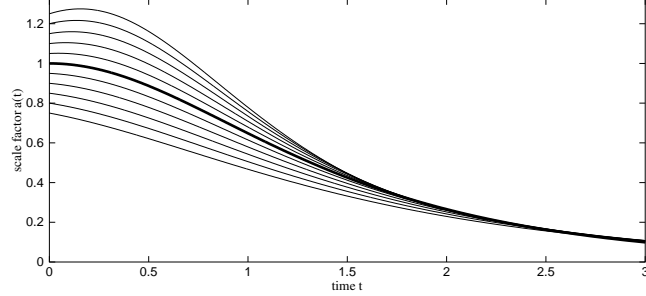
Example 2 *For zero curvature $k = 0$ and for $\theta = 1$, we take solution 2 in Table 14 of the homogeneous equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = 0$ with $Q(\tau) = Q_0 > 0$. That is, $Y(\tau) = \sin(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)$ and by (D.12) - (D.14) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{Q_0}}\text{Arctan}\left(e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = sech\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)\right) \tag{3.33}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.18) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = 2\sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{\kappa}}\text{Arctan}\left(e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.34}$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.27), (D.15) and (D.14) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}(Y')^2 - \frac{1}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{(d-1)Q_0}{2\kappa}\left[d\,tanh^2\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)\right) - sech^2\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)\right)\right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.35}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(w) &= \frac{(d-1)Q_0}{2\kappa}\left[d\,tanh^2\left(\ln\left(\tan\left(\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w-\beta_0)\right)\right)\right)\right. \\
&\qquad \left. -sech^2\left(\ln\left(\tan\left(\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w-\beta_0)\right)\right)\right)\right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.36}
$$

36

since

$$\phi^{-1}(w) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{Q_0}} \ln\left(\tan\left(\frac{1}{2}\sqrt{\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w - \beta_0)\right)\right) + t_0. \tag{3.37}$$

This differs from Example 1 only in the form of the potential V.

For $Q_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y and Y' both perturbed by .05. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that this solution is stable.

Figure 2. Stability of FRLW Example 2
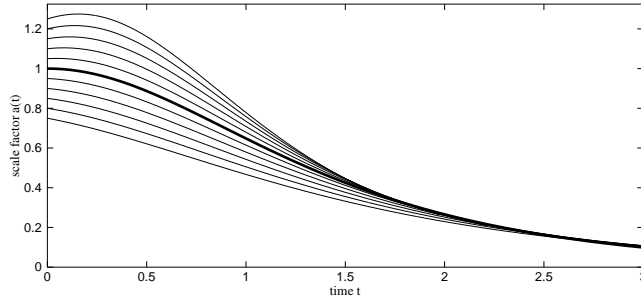
Example 3 *For zero curvature $k = 0$ and for $\theta = 1$, we take solution 4 in Table 14 of the homogeneous equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = 0$ with $Q(\tau) = d_0(1 - d_0)/\tau^2$ for an arbitrary constant $0 \leq d_0 < 1$. That is, $Y(\tau) = a_0\tau^{d_0}$ and by setting $r_0 = 1$ in (D.19) - (D.21) we obtain $\tau(t) = ((1 - d_0)a_0(t - t_0))^{\frac{1}{1-d_0}}$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = A_0(t - t_0)^{\frac{d_0}{1-d_0}} \tag{3.38}$$

for $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $A_0 \overset{def.}{=} \left(a_0(1 - d_0)^{d_0}\right)^{1/(1-d_0)}$. Then by (D.43) with $\alpha_0 = (d - 1)/\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = B \ln(t - t_0) + \beta_0 \tag{3.39}$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $B \stackrel{def.}{=} \sqrt{\frac{d_0(d-1)}{\kappa(1-d_0)}}$. Finally, by (3.27), (D.22) and (D.21), we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}(Y')^2 - \frac{1}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{B^2}{2}\left(\frac{d_0(d+1)-1}{(1-d_0)} \right)\frac{1}{(t-t_0)^2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.40}
$$

and

$$
V(w) = \frac{B^2}{2}\left(\frac{d_0(d+1)-1}{(1-d_0)} \right)e^{-\frac{2}{B}(w-\beta_0)} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\tag{3.41}
$$

since

$$
\phi^{-1}(w) = e^{\frac{1}{B}(w-\beta_0)} + t_0.
\tag{3.42}
$$

By setting $d = 3$, $\Lambda = t_0 = 0$ and identifying $d_0/(1 - d_0)$ here with n in [13], we obtain the zero curvature solution in example 4.4 of Ellis and Madsen [13]. Also, by setting $d = 2$, $\Lambda = 0$, $a_0 = (\sqrt{\kappa}/d_0)^{d_0}$ and identifying $(1-d_0)/d_0$ and κ here with γ_2 and κ_2 in [15], we obtain the Cruz-Martinez solution with $\epsilon_a = 1$, where one must note that our integration constant β_0 corresponds to $ln(\gamma_2\sqrt{\kappa_2})/\sqrt{\kappa_2\gamma_2} + \phi_0$ in [15]. Similarly with $d = 3$, $\Lambda = 0$, $a_0 = (\sqrt{\kappa/3}/d_0)^{d_0}$ and identifying $(1-d_0)/d_0$ and κ here with $3\gamma_3/2$ and κ_3 in [15], we obtain the $(3+1)$ counterpart of the Cruz-Martinez solution with $\epsilon_a = 1$, where again our integration constant β_0 corresponds to $2ln\left(\gamma_3\sqrt{3\kappa_3}/2\right)/\sqrt{3\kappa_3\gamma_3} + \phi_0$ in [15]. One can also compare this example with solutions in [5, 16]

For $a_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .01. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. In both cases, the absolute error grows by two orders of magnitude over the graphed time intervals.

Figure 3. Instability of FRLW Example 3, $d_0 = 1/2$

Figure 4. Instability of FRLW Example 3, $d_0 = 1/3$
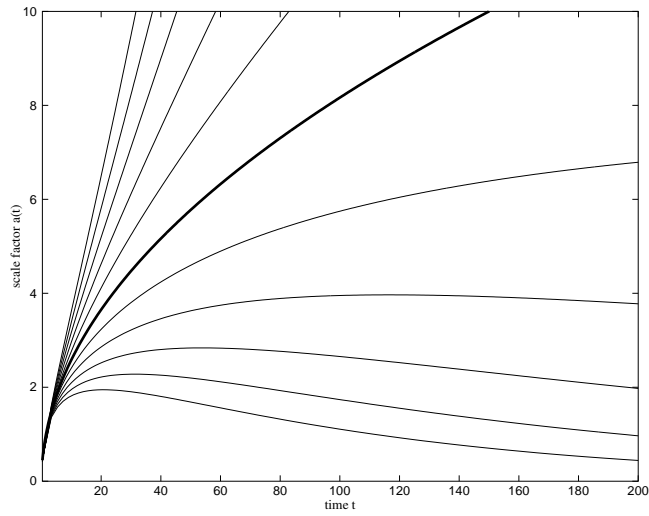
Example 4 *For zero curvature $k = 0$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution $Y(\tau) = \tau, Q(\tau) = 0$ from line 4 in Table 14 with $d_0 = 1$ for the homogeneous equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = 0$. By following (D.23) - (D.25) we obtain $\tau(t) = a_0 e^{t-t_0}$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = a_0 e^{t-t_0} \tag{3.43}$$

for $a_0, t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $t > t_0$. Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$ we have constant scalar field $\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by equation (3.27) for $V(\phi(t))$ and using that $Y'(\tau) = 1$, we obtain constant potential $V = \frac{1}{\kappa}\left(\frac{d(d-1)}{2} - \Lambda\right)$.

For $a_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .1. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows by up to four orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 5. Instability of FRLW Example 4
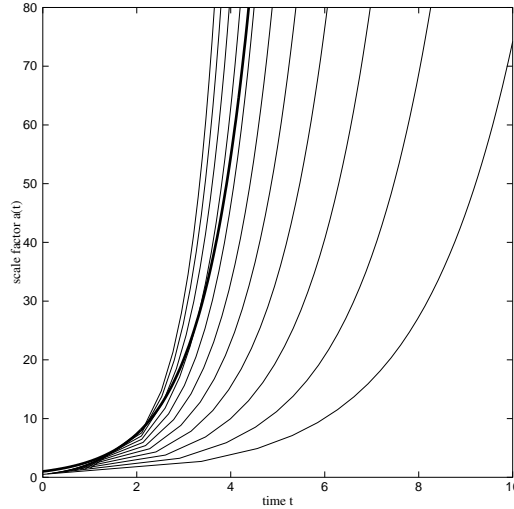
Example 5 *For negative curvature $k = -1$ and for $\theta = 1$, we consider the classical EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -1/Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 5 in Table 14 with $b_0 = d_0 = 0$ and $c_0 = 1$, we have that $Q(\tau) = 0$ and $Y(\tau) = (a_0 + 2\tau)^{1/2}$ for some*

$a_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. *Following (D.27) - (D.29) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{1}{2}\left((t-t_0)^2 - a_0\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = t - t_0 \qquad (3.44)$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$ we obtain constant scalar field $\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.27), (D.30) and (D.29) we obtain constant potential $V(\phi(t)) = -\Lambda/\kappa$.

For $a_0 = t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .1. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows by two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 6. Instability of FRLW Example 5
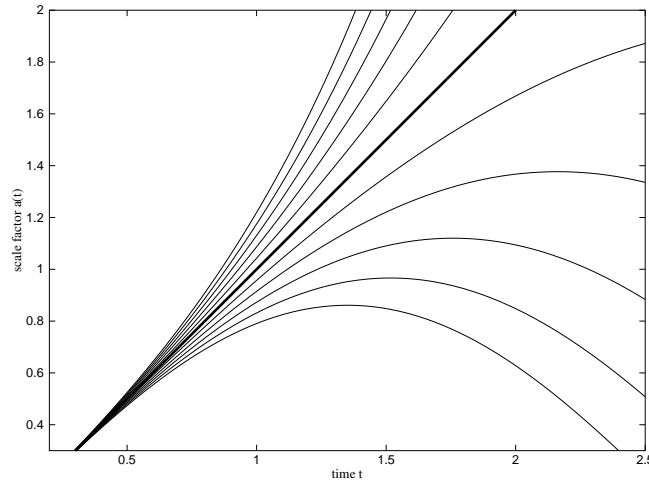
Example 6 *For $\theta = 1$ and arbitrary curvature $k = a_0 b_0 - c_0^2$ for some $b_0 > 0$ and $a_0, c_0 \in \mathbb{R}$, we consider the classical EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = (a_0 b_0 - c_0^2)/Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 5 in Table 14 with $d_0 = 0$, we have that $Q(\tau) = 0$ and $Y(\tau) = (a_0 + b_0\tau^2 + 2c_0\tau)^{1/2}$. Following (D.33) - (D.35) with $k = \lambda$ we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{1}{4b_0^{3/2}}\left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - 4ke^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - 4\sqrt{b_0}c_0\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = \frac{1}{4}e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} + \frac{k}{b_0}e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} \qquad (3.45)$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$ we obtain constant scalar field

$$\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \qquad (3.46)$$

41

for constant $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.27), (D.36) and (D.35) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa} \left(\frac{b_0 \left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - 4ke^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} \right)^2 + 16b_0^2 k}{\left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} + 4ke^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} \right)^2} \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \\
&= \frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\frac{d(d-1)b_0}{2} - \Lambda \right).
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.47}
$$

For $a_0 = b_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = c_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .1. The graphs of $a(t)$ show that the solution is unstable. In both cases the absolute error grows by up to two orders of magnitude over the graphed time intervals.
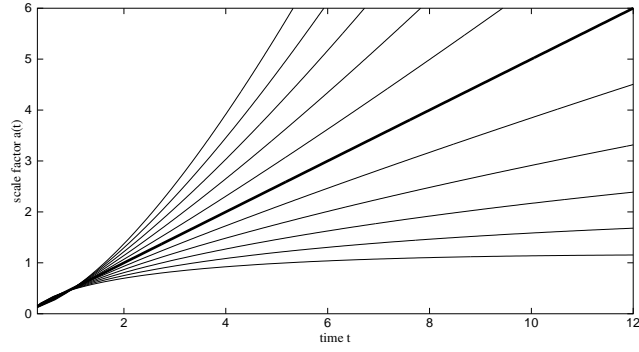
**Figure 7. Instability of FRLW Example 6, $k = 1$**

**Figure 8. Instability of FRLW Example 6, $k = -1$**
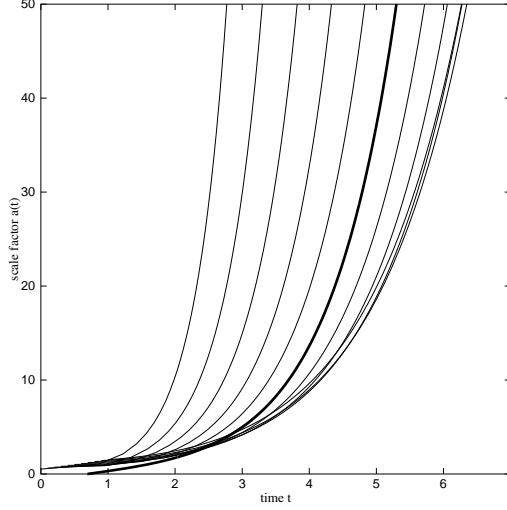
Example 7 *For curvature k and $\theta > 0$, we consider the EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = k/\theta^2 Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 5 in Table 14 with $a_0 = b_0 = 0$ and $c_0 = 1/2$, we have that $Q(\tau) = d_0(1 - d_0)/\tau^2$ for the choice $d_0 = (1/2) - (\sqrt{-k}/\theta)$, and $Y(\tau) = \sqrt{\tau}$. Following (D.38)-(D.39) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{\theta^2}{4}(t - t_0)^2$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = \frac{\theta}{2}(t - t_0) \tag{3.48}$$

for $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.44) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$ we obtain scalar field

$$\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)) = \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)(\theta^2 + 4k)}{\kappa\theta^2}} \ln(t - t_0) + \beta_0. \tag{3.49}$$

Also by (3.27) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa} \left(\theta^2(Y')^2 + \frac{k}{Y^2} \right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{(d-1)^2}{2\kappa\theta^2} \frac{(\theta^2 + 4k)}{(t - t_0)^2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.50}
$$

so that

$$V(w) = \frac{(d-1)^2}{2\kappa\theta^2} \left(\theta^2 + 4k \right) e^{-2\sqrt{\frac{\kappa\theta^2}{(d-1)(\theta^2+4k)}}(w-\beta_0)} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.51}$$

43

since

$$\phi^{-1}(w) = e^{\sqrt{\frac{\kappa\theta^2}{(d-1)(\theta^2+4k)}}(w-\beta_0)} + t_0. \qquad (3.52)$$

Note that although the number d_0 may be complex, the above solution is real for each $k \in \{-1, 0, 1\}$ by a proper choice of $\theta > 0$. By taking $d = 3, \Lambda = t_0 = 0$ and also identifying $\theta/2$ here with A in [13], we obtain the solutions in example 4.5 of Ellis and Madsen [13]. One can also compare with solutions in [5].

For $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .01. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. In all three cases below the absolute error grows by up to two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 9. Instability of FRLW Example 7, $k = 0, \theta = 1$
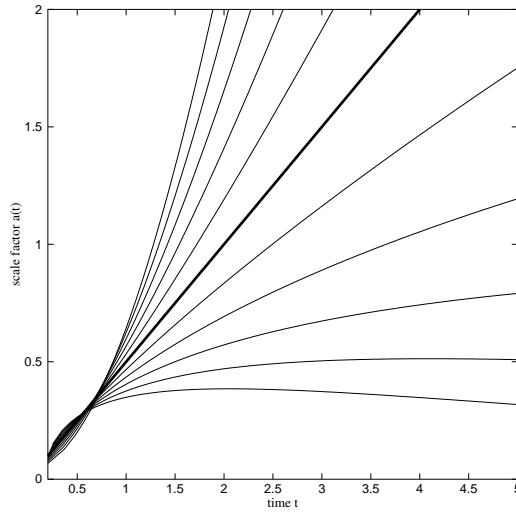
Figure 10. Instability of FRLW Example 7, $k = 1, \theta = 1$
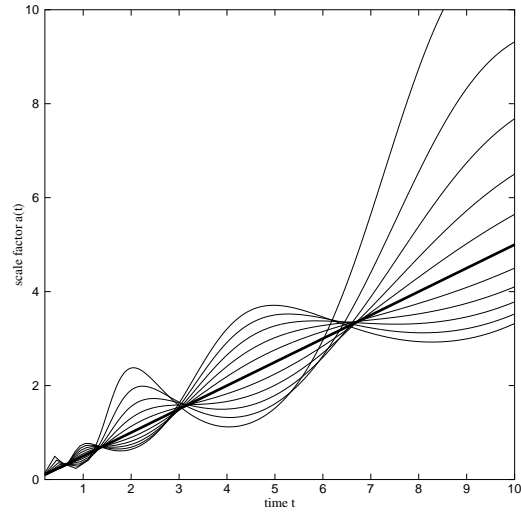
Figure 11. Instability of FRLW Example 7, $k = -1, \theta = 4$
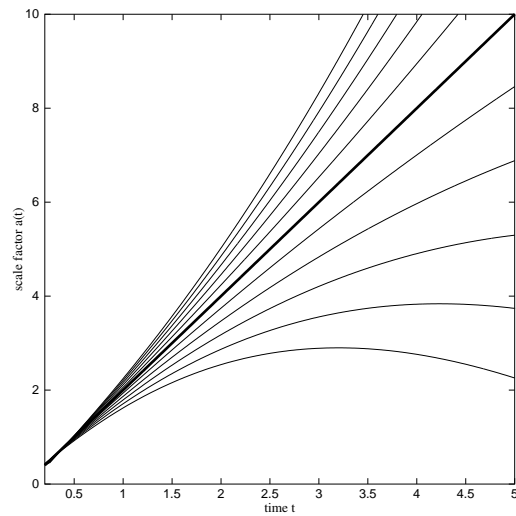
Example 8 *For $k \in \{0, 1\}$ and $\theta > 0$, we consider the EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = k/\theta^2 Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 6 in Table 14 with $\lambda_1 = k/\theta^2$ and $B_1 = 3$, we have that $Q(\tau) = k/\theta^2\tau^4$ and $Y(\tau) = \tau$. Following (D.45) - (D.46) we obtain $\tau(t) = a_0 e^{\theta(t-t_0)}$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = a_0 e^{\theta(t-t_0)} \tag{3.53}$$

for $a_0 > 0$ and $t > t_0$. Then by (D.48) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = -\frac{1}{a_0}\sqrt{\frac{(d-1)k}{\theta^2\kappa}}e^{-\theta(t-t_0)} + \beta_0. \tag{3.54}$$

Finally, by (3.27) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(\theta^2(Y')^2 + \frac{k}{Y^2}\right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\theta^2 + \frac{(d-1)^2k}{2\kappa a_0^2}e^{-2\theta(t-t_0)} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
$$

so that

$$V(w) = \frac{(d-1)\theta^2}{2}\left(\frac{d}{\kappa} + (w-\beta_0)^2\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.55}$$

by composition with ϕ^{-1}. By taking $d = 3$, $\Lambda = t_0 = 0$ and identifying θ with ω, a_0 with A and β_0 with ϕ_0 in [13], this is example 4.1 of Ellis and Madsen [13]. One can also compare this example with the (non-phantom) exponential expansion solution in [17], and also other solutions in [5].

For $a_0 = \theta = k = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .1. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows by two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.
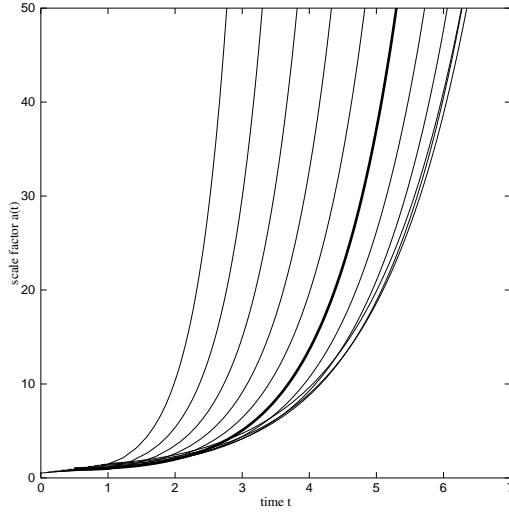
Figure 12. Instability of FRLW Example 8
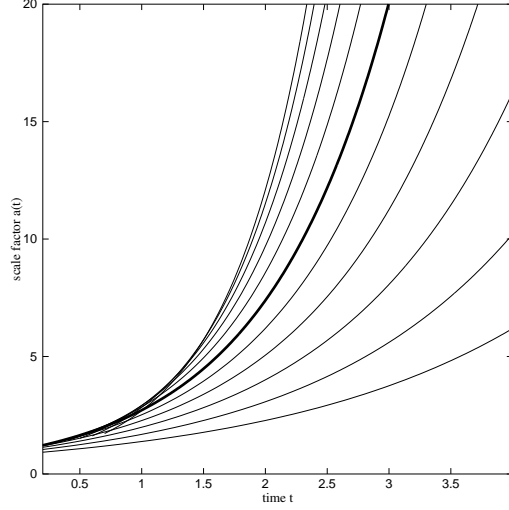
Example 9 *For $\theta = 1$ and positive curvature $k = 1$, we consider the classical EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = 1/Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 7 in Table 14 we have $Y(\tau) = (a_0^2\tau^2 + b_0^2)^{1/2}$ with $\lambda_1 = 1$ and we take $Q(\tau) = (1 - a_0^2 b_0^2)/(a_0^2\tau^2 + b_0^2)^2$ for $a_0, b_0 > 0$ and $(1 - a_0^2 b_0^2) > 0$. Following (D.49)-(D.51) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{b_0}{a_0}\sinh(a_0(t - t_0))$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = b_0 \cosh(a_0(t - t_0)) \tag{3.56}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.54) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$, we have scalar field

$$\phi(t) = \frac{B_d}{a_0}\sqrt{\frac{2}{(d-1)}} Arctan\left(\sinh(a_0(t - t_0))\right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.57}$$

for $B_d \overset{def.}{=} \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)^2(1 - a_0^2 b_0^2)}{2\kappa b_0^2}}$. By (3.17) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left((Y')^2 + \frac{1}{Y^2}\right) - \frac{1}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{d(d-1)a_0^2}{2\kappa} + B_d^2 sech^2(a_0(t - t_0)) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.58}
\end{aligned}
$$

so that

$$V(w) = \frac{d(d-1)a_0^2}{2\kappa} + B_d^2 \cos^2\left(\frac{a_0}{B_d}\sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2}}(w - \beta_0)\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.59}$$

47

by composition with ϕ^{-1}. By taking $d = 3, \Lambda = t_0 = 0$ and identifying a_0 with ω, b_0 with A and $B_d = B_3$ with B in [13], this is comparable to example 4.3 of Ellis and Madsen [13]. One can verify via differentiation that $\phi(t)$ in (3.57) agrees up to a constant with $\phi(t)$ in example 4.3 of [13].

For $a_0 = \theta = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .01. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows by up to two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 13. Instability of FRLW Example 9
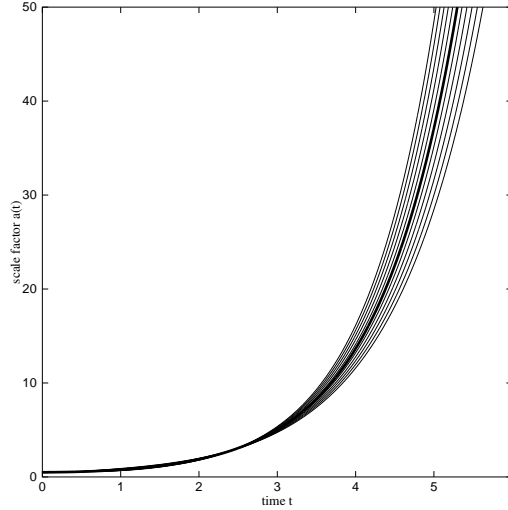
**Example 10** *For $\theta = 1$ and arbitrary curvature k, we consider the classical EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = k/Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 7 in Table 14, we have $Y(\tau) = (a_0^2\tau^2 - b_0^2)^{1/2}$ with $\lambda_1 = k$ and we take $Q(\tau) = (k + a_0^2 b_0^2)/\left(a_0^2\tau^2 - b_0^2\right)^2$ for $a_0, b_0 > 0$ such that $(k + a_0^2 b_0^2) > 0$. Following (D.55)-(D.57) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{b_0}{a_0}\cosh(a_0(t - t_0))$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = b_0\sinh(a_0(t - t_0)) \tag{3.60}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.60) with $\alpha_0 = (d - 1)/\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$\phi(t) = -\frac{B_d}{a_0}\sqrt{\frac{2}{(d - 1)}}Arctanh\left(\cosh(a_0(t - t_0))\right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.61}$$

48

for $B_d \overset{def.}{=} \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)^2(k+a_0^2 b_0^2)}{2\kappa b_0^2}}$. By (3.17) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa} \left((Y')^2 + \frac{k}{Y^2} \right) - \frac{1}{2} Y^2 (\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{d(d-1)a_0^2}{2\kappa} + B_d^2 csch^2(a_0(t-t_0)) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.62}
$$

so that

$$
V(w) = \frac{d(d-1)a_0^2}{2\kappa} + B_d^2 \sinh^2 \left(\frac{a_0}{B_d} \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2}} (w - \beta_0) \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\tag{3.63}
$$

by composition with ϕ^{-1}. By taking $d = 3, \Lambda = t_0 = 0$ and identifying a_0 with ω, b_0 with A and $B_d = B_3$ with B in [13], this is comparable to example 4.2 of Ellis and Madsen [13]. One can verify via differentiation that $\phi(t)$ in (3.57) agrees up to a constant with $\phi(t)$ in example 4.2 of [13].

3.1.2 Second reduction to classical EMP: zero curvature

For a second set of examples, we take special case with curvature $k = 0$ and $\rho' = p' = D_i = 0$ for all $i \neq 1$. For non-zero matter density $D_1/a(t)^{n_1} \equiv D/a(t)^n$ with $D, n \neq 0$ constants, and we choose parameter $q = n/2$. Then Theorem 3.1.1 shows that solving Einstein's equations

$$
\frac{d}{2} H^2(t) \overset{(i)''}{=} \frac{\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}(t)^2 + V(\phi(t)) + \frac{D}{a(t)^n} \right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)}
\tag{3.64}
$$

$$
\dot{H}(t) + \frac{d}{2} H(t)^2 \overset{(ii)''}{=} -\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}(t)^2 - V(\phi(t)) + \frac{(n-d)D}{da(t)^n} \right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)}
$$

is equivalent to solving the classical EMP equation

$$
Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{-n^2 \kappa D}{2\theta^2 d(d-1)Y(\tau)^3}
\tag{3.65}
$$

for any constant $\theta > 0$. The solutions of $(i)'', (ii)''$ and (3.65) are related by

$$
a(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{2/n} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{2(d-1)}{n\kappa} Q(\tau)
\tag{3.66}
$$

49

for $\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t))$ and

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta a(t)^{n/2} = \theta Y(\tau(t)). \tag{3.67}$$

Also in the converse direction, V is taken to be

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{2\theta^2 d(d-1)}{\kappa n^2}(Y')^2 - \frac{\theta^2}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{D}{Y^2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t). \tag{3.68}$$

We now refer to Appendix D for solutions of the classical and corresponding homogeneous EMP equation (3.65) that we will map over to solutions of Einstein's equations. By comparing (3.67) and (D.5), we note to only consider solutions of (D.5) in Appendix D corresponding to $r_0 = 1$. Also note that $\sigma(t)$ in (D.6) is not relevant in the FRLW model.

Example 11 *For zero matter density ($D = 0$) and for $\theta = 1$, we take solution 1 in Table 14 of the homogeneous equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = 0$ with $Q(\tau) = Q_0 > 0$. That is, $Y(\tau) = \cos(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)$ and by (D.8) - (D.10) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{Q_0}}Arctan\left(tanh\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0) \right) \right)$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{2/n} = sech^{2/n}\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0) \right) \tag{3.69}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.17) with $\alpha_0 = 2(d-1)/n\kappa$, we have scalar field

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = 2^{3/2}\sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{n\kappa}}Arctan\left(tanh\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0) \right) \right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.70}$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.68), (D.11) and (D.10) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{2d(d-1)}{n^2\kappa}(Y')^2 - \frac{1}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \\ &= \frac{(d-1)Q_0}{n\kappa}\left(\frac{2d}{n}tanh^2\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0) \right) - sech^2\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0) \right) \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \end{aligned} \tag{3.71}$$

so that

$$\begin{aligned} V(w) &= \frac{(d-1)Q_0}{n\kappa}\left(\frac{2d}{n}tanh^2\left(2Arctanh\left(tan\left(\frac{1}{2^{3/2}}\sqrt{\frac{n\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w - \beta_0) \right) \right) \right) \right. \\ &\left. -sech^2\left(2Arctanh\left(tan\left(\frac{1}{2^{3/2}}\sqrt{\frac{n\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w - \beta_0) \right) \right) \right) \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \end{aligned} \tag{3.72}$$

50

since

$$\phi^{-1}(w) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{Q_0}} Arctanh\left(\tan\left(\frac{1}{2^{3/2}}\sqrt{\frac{n\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w-\beta_0)\right)\right) + t_0. \tag{3.73}$$

This solution is the same as Example 1 when $n = 2$. One reasonably expects the convergence properties to be the same as Example 1, since $Y(\tau)$ and the EMP equation do not depend on n.

Example 12 *For zero matter density $(D = 0)$ and for $\theta = 1$, we take solution 2 in Table 14 of the homogeneous equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = 0$ with $Q(\tau) = Q_0 > 0$. That is, $Y(\tau) = \sin(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)$ and by (D.12) - (D.14) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{Q_0}} Arctan\left(e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{2/n} = sech^{2/n}\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)\right) \tag{3.74}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.18) with $\alpha_0 = 2(d-1)/n\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = 2^{3/2}\sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{n\kappa}} Arctan\left(e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.75}$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.68), (D.15) and (D.14) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{2d(d-1)}{n^2\kappa}(Y')^2 - \frac{1}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \tag{3.76}\\
&= \frac{(d-1)Q_0}{n\kappa}\left(\frac{2d}{n}tanh^2\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)\right) - sech^2\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)\right)\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(w) &= \frac{(d-1)Q_0}{n\kappa}\left[\frac{2d}{n}tanh^2\left(\ln\left(\tan\left(\frac{1}{2^{2/3}}\sqrt{\frac{n\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w-\beta_0)\right)\right)\right)\right.\\
&\quad \left. -sech^2\left(\ln\left(\tan\left(\frac{1}{2^{2/3}}\sqrt{\frac{n\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w-\beta_0)\right)\right)\right)\right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.77}
\end{aligned}
$$

since

$$\phi^{-1}(w) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{Q_0}}\ln\left(\tan\left(\frac{1}{2^{2/3}}\sqrt{\frac{n\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w-\beta_0)\right)\right) + t_0. \tag{3.78}$$

51

This differs from Example 7 only in the form of the potential V. This solution is the same as Example 2 when $n = 2$. One reasonably expects the convergence properties to be the same as Example 2, since $Y(\tau)$ and the EMP equation do not depend on n.

Example 13 *For $D = 2d(d-1)/n^2\kappa$ and $\theta = 1$, we consider the classical EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -1/Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 5 in Table 14 with $b_0 = d_0 = 0$ and $c_0 = 1$, we have that $Q(\tau) = 0$ and $Y(\tau) = (a_0 + 2\tau)^{1/2}$ for some $a_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Following (D.27) - (D.29) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{1}{2}\left((t-t_0)^2 - a_0\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{2/n} = (t-t_0)^{2/n} \tag{3.79}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $t > t_0$. Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$, the scalar field is constant

$$\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \tag{3.80}$$

for $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.68), (D.30) and (D.29) we obtain constant potential

$$V(\phi(t)) = -\frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{3.81}$$

This solution is the same as Example 5 when $n = 2$. One reasonably expects the convergence properties to be the same as Example 5, since $Y(\tau)$ and the EMP equation do not depend on n.

Example 14 *For $\theta = 1$ and $D = 2d(d-1)/n^2\kappa$ we consider the classical EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -1/Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 5 in Table 14 with $d_0 = 0$ and $a_0 = (c_0^2 - 1)/b_0$ for some $b_0 > 0$ and $c_0 \in \mathbb{R}$, we have that $Q(\tau) = 0$ and $Y(\tau) = (a_0 + b_0\tau^2 + 2c_0\tau)^{1/2}$. Following (D.33) - (D.35) with $\lambda = -1$ we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{1}{4b_0^{3/2}}\left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} + 4e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - 4\sqrt{b_0}c_0\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{2/n} = \left(\frac{1}{4}e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - \frac{1}{b_0}e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}\right)^{2/n} \tag{3.82}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$, the scalar field is any constant

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}. \tag{3.83}$$

Finally, by (3.68), (D.36) and (D.35) we obtain constant potential

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \frac{2d(d-1)}{\kappa n^2} \left(\frac{b_0 \left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} + 4e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} \right)^2 - 16b_0^2}{\left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - 4e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} \right)^2} \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \\
&= \frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\frac{2d(d-1)b_0}{n^2} - \Lambda \right).
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.84}
$$

This solution is the same as Example 6 when $n = 2$. One reasonably expects the convergence properties to be the same as Example 6, since $Y(\tau)$ and the EMP equation do not depend on n.

Example 15 *For constant $C \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{n^2 \kappa D}{2\theta^2 d(d-1)} > 0$, we consider the EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -C/\theta^2 Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 5 in Table 14 with $a_0 = b_0 = 0$ and $c_0 = 1/2$, we have that $Q(\tau) = d_0(1 - d_0)/\tau^2$ for the choice $d_0 = (1/2) - (\sqrt{C}/\theta)$, and $Y(\tau) = \sqrt{\tau}$. Following (D.38)-(D.39) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{\theta^2}{4}(t - t_0)^2$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{2/n} = \left(\frac{\theta}{2}(t - t_0) \right)^{2/n} \tag{3.85}$$

for $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.44) with $\alpha_0 = 2(d-1)/n\kappa$, we get scalar field

$$\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)) = \sqrt{\frac{2(d-1)(\theta^2 - 4C)}{n\kappa\theta^2}} \ln(t - t_0) + \beta_0. \tag{3.86}$$

Also by (3.27) we obtain

$$V(\phi(t)) = \frac{(d-1)(\theta^2 - 4C)(2d - n)}{\kappa n^2 \theta^2 (t - t_0)^2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.87}$$

so that

$$V(w) = \frac{(d-1)(\theta^2 - 4C)(2d - n)}{\kappa n^2 \theta^2} e^{-2\sqrt{\frac{n\kappa\theta^2}{2(d-1)(\theta^2 - 4C)}}(w - \beta_0)} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.88}$$

since

$$\phi^{-1}(w) = e^{\sqrt{\frac{n\kappa\theta2}{2(d-1)(\theta2-4C)}}(w-\beta_0)} + t_0.$$

(3.89)

For $C = 1, \theta = 4, n = 2$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows three orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval. Since $Y(\tau)$ does not depend on n, other choices of n will also be unstable.

Figure 14. Instability of FRLW Example 15
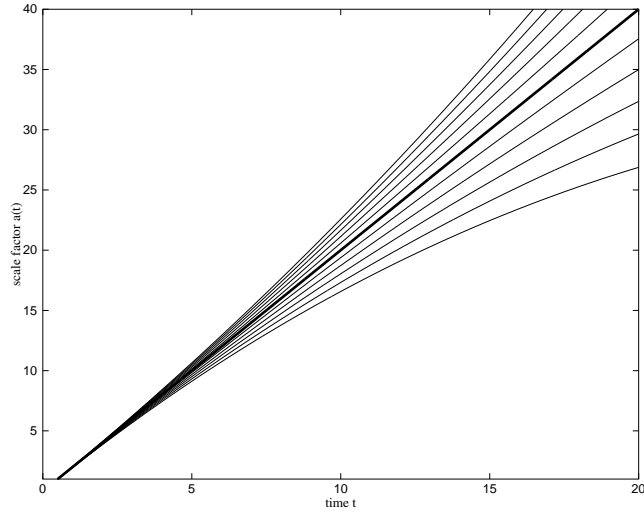
Example 16 *For $\theta = 1$ and constant $C \overset{def.}{=} \frac{n^2\kappa D}{2d(d-1)} > 0$, we consider the EMP equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -C/Y(\tau)^3$. For solution 7 in Table 14 we have $Y(\tau) = (a_0^2\tau^2 - b_0^2)^{1/2}$ with $\lambda_1 = -C$ and we let $Q(\tau) = (a_0^2 b_0^2 - C)/(a_0^2\tau^2 - b_0^2)^2$ for $a_0, b_0 > 0$ chosen such that $(a_0^2 b_0^2 - C) > 0$. Following (D.55)-(D.57) we obtain $\tau(t) = \frac{b_0}{a_0}\cosh(a_0(t - t_0))$ and*

$$a(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{2/n} = (b_0\sinh(a_0(t - t_0)))^{2/n}$$

(3.90)

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (D.60) with $\alpha_0 = 2(d-1)/n\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$\phi(t) = -\frac{B_d}{a_0}\sqrt{\frac{2}{(d-1)}}Arctanh\left(\cosh(a_0(t - t_0))\right) + \beta_0$$

(3.91)

54

for $B_d \overset{def.}{=} \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)^2(a_0^2 b_0^2 - C)}{n \kappa b_0^2}}$. By (3.17) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{2d(d-1)}{\kappa n^2}(Y')^2 - \frac{1}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{D}{Y^2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{2d(d-1)a_0^2}{n^2 \kappa} + \frac{B_d^2(2d-n)}{n(d-1)} csch^2(a_0(t-t_0)) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
$$

(3.92)

so that

$$
V(w) = \frac{2d(d-1)a_0^2}{n^2 \kappa} + \frac{B_d^2(2d-n)}{n(d-1)} \cosh^2\left(\frac{a_0}{B_d}\sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2}}(w - \beta_0) \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \quad (3.93)
$$

by composition with ϕ^{-1}.

For $C = b_0 = 1, a_0 = 2, n = 3$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with Y, Y' and τ perturbed by .01. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows 16 orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval. Since $Y(\tau)$ does not depend on n, other choices of n will also be unstable.

Figure 15. Instability of FRLW Example 16

55
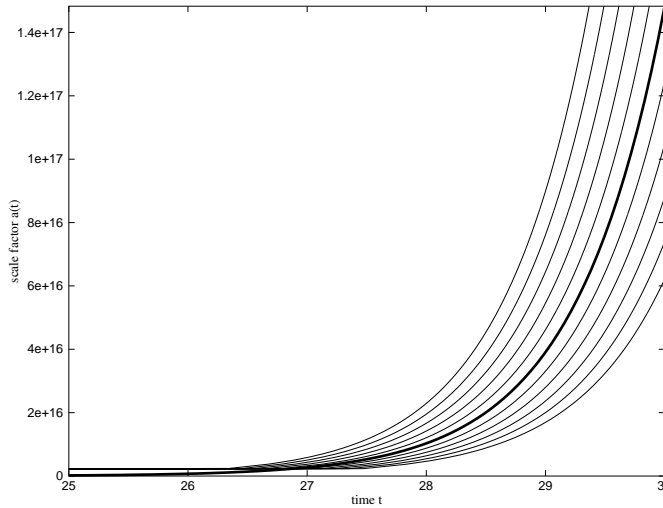
3.2 In terms of a Schrödinger-Type Equation

To reformulate the Einstein field equations (i),(ii) in (3.5) in terms of a Schrödinger-type equation (with one less non-linear term than that which is provided by the generalized EMP formulation), one can apply Corollary 2.3.1 to the difference (ii)-(i). In doing so, Corollary 2.3.1 may be applied in a few different ways: either by taking $\frac{G(t)}{a(t)^A} = \frac{k}{a(t)^2}$ in which case this term transforms into the linear term $Eu(\sigma) = \theta^2 k u(\sigma)$ in the corresponding Schrödiner-type equation, or by taking $\frac{G(t)}{a(t)^A} = -\frac{\kappa n_j D_j(t)}{d(d-1)a(t)^{n_j}}$ where j is some index with $n_j \neq 0$ in which case this nonlinear term transforms into the linear term $E(\sigma)u(\sigma) = -\frac{\theta^2 \kappa n_j^2}{2d(d-1)} \mathrm{D}_j(\sigma)u(\sigma)$ in the corresponding Schrödinger-type equation. We will state both applications.

Theorem 3.2.1 $\left(\text{Apply Corollary 2.3.1 with } \frac{G(t)}{a(t)^A} = \frac{k}{a(t)^2}\right)$

Suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $a(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $D_i(t), \rho'(t), p'(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(i), (ii)$ in (3.5) for some $k, n_1, \ldots, n_M, \Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0,1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ and $M \in \mathbb{N}$. Let $g(\sigma)$ denote the inverse of a function $\sigma(t)$ which satisfies

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta a(t)} \tag{3.94}$$

for some $\theta > 0$. Then the following functions

$$u(\sigma) = \frac{1}{a(g(\sigma))} \tag{3.95}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{3.96}$$

solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [\theta^2 k - P(\sigma)]u(\sigma) = \sum_{i=1}^{M}\frac{\theta^2 \kappa n_i \mathrm{D}_i(\sigma)}{d(d-1)u(\sigma)^{1-n_i}} + \frac{\theta^2 \kappa(\rho(\sigma) + \mathrm{p}(\sigma))}{(d-1)u(\sigma)} \tag{3.97}$$

for

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(g(\sigma)) \tag{3.98}$$

$$\mathrm{D}_i(\sigma) = D_i(g(\sigma)), \quad 1 \leq i \leq M \tag{3.99}$$

and

$$\rho(\sigma) = \rho'(g(\sigma)), \; \mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p'(g(\sigma)). \tag{3.100}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$, and also functions $P(\sigma), \mathrm{D}_i(\sigma)$ for $1 \leq i \leq M, M \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\rho(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$ which solve (3.97) for some constants $\theta > 0, k \in \mathbb{R}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}, d \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0,1\}$ and $n_i \in \mathbb{R}$ for $1 \leq i \leq M$. In order to construct functions which solve $(i),(ii)$, first find $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma)$ which solve the differential equations

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta} u(\sigma(t)) \qquad and \qquad \psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{\kappa} P(\sigma). \tag{3.101}$$

Then the functions

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} \tag{3.102}$$

$$\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t)) \tag{3.103}$$

$$D_i(t) = \mathrm{D}_i(\sigma(t)), \quad 1 \leq i \leq M \tag{3.104}$$

$$\rho'(t) = \rho(\sigma(t)), \; p'(t) = \mathrm{p}(\sigma(t)), \tag{3.105}$$

and

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa} \left(\frac{1}{\theta^2}(u')^2 + ku^2 \right) - \frac{u^2(\psi')^2}{2\theta^2} - \sum_{i=1}^{M} \mathrm{D}_i u^{n_i} - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \sigma(t) \tag{3.106}$$

satisfy the equations $(i),(ii)$.

Proof. This proof will implement Corollary 2.3.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

<div align="center">**Table 2.** Corollary 2.3.1 applied to FRLW</div>

In Corollary	substitute	In Corollary	substitute
ε	$\kappa/(d-1)$	$E(\sigma)$	constant $\theta^2 k$
$G(t)$	constant k	A	2
$G_i(t), 1 \leq i \leq M$	$-\frac{\kappa n_i}{d(d-1)} D_i(t)$	A_i	n_i
$G_{M+1}(t)$	$\frac{-\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho'(t) + p'(t))$	A_{M+1}	0
$F_i(\sigma), 1 \leq i \leq M$	$\frac{\theta^2 \kappa n_i}{d(d-1)} \mathrm{D}_i(\sigma)$	C_i	$1 - n_i$
$F_{M+1}(\sigma)$	$\frac{\theta^2 \kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(\sigma) + \mathrm{p}(\sigma))$	C_{M+1}	1

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations (i) and (ii). Subtracting equations $(ii) - (i)$,

$$\dot{H}(t) - \frac{k}{a(t)^2} = -\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + \sum_{i=1}^{M} \frac{n_i D_i(t)}{da(t)^{n_i}} + (\rho'(t) + p'(t))\right]. \qquad (3.107)$$

This shows that $a(t), \phi(t), D_i(t), \rho'(t)$ and $p'(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with constants $\varepsilon, N, A, A_1 \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G(t), G_1(t) \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 2. Since $\sigma(t), u(\sigma), P(\sigma)$ and $\psi(\sigma)$ defined in (3.94), (3.95), (3.96) and (3.98) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Corollary 2.3.1, by this corollary and by definitions (3.99) and (3.100) of $\mathrm{D}_i(\sigma)$ and $\rho(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$, the Schrödinger-type equation (2.110) holds for constants $C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 2. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, assume we are given functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation (3.97) and we begin by showing that (i) is satisfied. Differentiating the definition (3.102) of $a(t)$ and by the definition in (3.101) of $\sigma(t)$, we see that

$$\dot{a}(t) = -\frac{u'(\sigma(t))}{u(\sigma(t))^2}\dot{\sigma}(t)$$

$$= -\frac{u'(\sigma(t))}{\theta u(\sigma(t))}. \tag{3.108}$$

Dividing by $a(t)$, we obtain

$$H(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}(t)}{a(t)} = -\frac{1}{\theta}u'(\sigma(t)). \tag{3.109}$$

Differentiating the definition (3.103) of $\phi(t)$ and using definition in (3.101) of $\sigma(t)$, we get that

$$\dot{\phi}(t) = \psi'(\sigma(t))\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta}\psi'(\sigma(t))u(\sigma(t)). \tag{3.110}$$

Using (3.109) and (3.110), and also the definitions (3.102), (3.104) and (3.105) of $a(t), D_i(t)$ and $\rho'(t), p'(t)$ respectively, the definition (3.106) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written

$$V(\phi(t)) = \frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(H(t)^2 + \frac{k}{a(t)^2}\right) - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 - \sum_{i=1}^{M}\frac{D_i(t)}{a(t)^{n_i}} - \rho'(t) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{3.111}$$

This shows that (i) holds (That is, the definition of $V(\phi(t))$ was designed to be such that (i) holds).

To conclude the proof we must also show that (ii) holds. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Corollary 2.3.1 holds, applied with constants $N, C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $E(\sigma), F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 2. Since $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma), a(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (3.101), (3.102) and (3.103) are consistent with the converse implication of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with ε and A as in Table 2, by this corollary and by definitions (3.104) and (3.105) of $D_i(t)$ and $\rho'(t), p'(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.109) holds for constants $\varepsilon, A, A_1, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 2. That is, we have regained (3.107) which shows that the subtraction of equations (ii)-(i) holds in the converse direction. Now solving (3.111) for $\rho'(t)$ and substituting this into (3.107), we obtain (ii). This proves the theorem. $\diamond$

3.2.1 Reduction to linear Schrödinger: pure scalar field

To compute some exact solutions, we take special case $\rho' = p' = D_i = 0$ so that Theorem 3.2.1 shows that solving the Einstein equations

$$\frac{d}{2}H^2(t) + \frac{dk}{2a(t)^2} \overset{(i)'''}{=} \frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + V(\phi(t))\right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)} \tag{3.112}$$

$$\tag{3.113}$$

$$\dot{H}(t) + \frac{d}{2}H(t)^2 + \frac{(d-2)k}{2a(t)^2} \overset{(ii)'''}{=} -\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 - V(\phi(t))\right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)}$$

is equivalent to solving the linear Schrödinger equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [\theta^2 k - P(\sigma)]u(\sigma) = 0 \tag{3.114}$$

for any constant $\theta > 0$. The solutions of $(i)''', (ii)'''$ and (3.114) are related by

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} \quad \text{and} \quad \psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{\kappa}P(\sigma) \tag{3.115}$$

for $\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t))$ and

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta a(t)} = \frac{1}{\theta}u(\sigma(t)). \tag{3.116}$$

Also in the converse direction, V is taken to be

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(\frac{1}{\theta^2}(u')^2 + ku^2\right) - \frac{u^2(\psi')^2}{2\theta^2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t). \tag{3.117}$$

We now refer to Appendix E for solutions of the linear Schrödinger equation (3.114), which we will map to solutions of Einstein's equations using the theorem.

Example 17 *For zero curvature $k = 0$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 1 in Table 15 with $a_0 = d_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = b_0\sigma + c_0$ and $P(\sigma) = 0$ for $b_0 > 0$ and $c_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. By (E.4) - (E.6) we obtain $\sigma(t) = e^{b_0(t-t_0)} - \frac{c_0}{b_0}$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = \frac{1}{b_0}e^{-b_0(t-t_0)} \tag{3.118}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, the scalar field is constant

$$\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0 \in \mathbb{R}. \tag{3.119}$$

Finally, by (3.117) and (E.7) we obtain constant potential

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}(u')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t) \\
&= \frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}b_0^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned} \tag{3.120}
$$

Example 18 For zero curvature $k = 0$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 1 in Table 15 with $a_0 > 0$ and $d_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = a_0\sigma^2 + b_0\sigma + c_0$ and $P(\sigma) = 2a_0/(a_0\sigma^2 + b_0\sigma + c_0)$. By (E.8) - (E.10) we obtain $\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{2a_0}\left(\sqrt{-\Delta}\ tan\left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0)\right] - b_0\right)$ and

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = \frac{4a_0}{-\Delta}cos^2\left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0)\right] \tag{3.121}$$

for negative discriminant $\Delta = b_0^2 - 4a_0c_0 < 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (E.13) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \psi(\sigma(t)) = \sqrt{\frac{2(d-1)}{\kappa}}\ \ln\left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{a_0}\left(\ tan\left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0)\right]\right.\right. \\
\left.\left. +sec\left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0)\right]\right)\right] + \beta_0
\end{aligned} \tag{3.122}
$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.11) and (E.10) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}(u')^2 - \frac{1}{2}u^2(\psi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t) \\
&= \frac{-\Delta(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(d\ tan^2\left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0)\right] - \frac{1}{2}sec^2\left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0)\right]\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned} \tag{3.123}
$$

Example 19 For positive curvature $k = 1$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 2 in Table 15 with $b_0 = 1/\sqrt{2}$ and $a_0 > 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = a_0 \cos^2(\sigma/\sqrt{2})$,

$P(\sigma) = \tan^2(\sigma/\sqrt{2})$ and $E = 1$. By (E.14) - (E.16) we obtain $\sigma(t) = \sqrt{2}Arctan\left(\frac{a_0}{\sqrt{2}}(t - t_0)\right)$ and

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = \frac{1}{a_0}\left(1 + \frac{a_0^2}{2}(t - t_0)^2\right) \tag{3.124}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (E.19) with $\alpha_0 = (d - 1)/\kappa$, the scalar field becomes

$$\phi(t) = \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa}}\ln\left[\frac{a_0^2}{2}(t - t_0)^2 + 1\right] + \beta_0 \tag{3.125}$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.17) and (E.16), we obtain

$$V(\phi(t)) = \frac{(d-1)}{\kappa}\left(\frac{(2d-1)a_0^4(t - t_0)^2 + 2da_0^2}{(2 + a_0^2(t - t_0)^2)^2}\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{3.126}$$

That is, we have

$$V(w) = C_1 e^{-\sqrt{\frac{2\kappa}{(d-1)}}w} - C_2 e^{-2\sqrt{\frac{2\kappa}{(d-1)}}w} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.127}$$

for constants

$$C_1 = \frac{(d-1)(2d-1)a_0^2}{2\kappa}e^{\sqrt{\frac{2\kappa}{(d-1)}}\beta_0}, \qquad C_2 = \frac{(d-1)^2 a_0^2}{2\kappa}e^{2\sqrt{\frac{2\kappa}{(d-1)}}\beta_0} \tag{3.128}$$

and $w \geq \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa}}\ln(a_0^2/2) + \beta_0$, since

$$\phi^{-1}(w) = \frac{\sqrt{2}}{a_0}\sqrt{e^{\sqrt{\frac{2\kappa}{(d-1)}}(w - \beta_0)} - 1} + t_0. \tag{3.129}$$

By taking $d = 3$ and $t_0 = 0$, replacing a_0 with $1/a_0$, and identifying κ and β_0 here with K^2 and ϕ_0 in [26] respectively, we obtain the string-inspired solution II of [26]. One can check that the conditions on the constants C_1, C_2 in [26] (with $d = 3$) agree with the example here since

$$a_0^2 = \frac{2\kappa C_1^2}{(2d-1)^2 C_2} \quad and \quad \beta_0 = \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa}}\ln\left(\frac{(2d-1)C_2}{(d-1)C_1}\right). \tag{3.130}$$

For $a_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows by up to five orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 16. Instability of FRLW Example 19
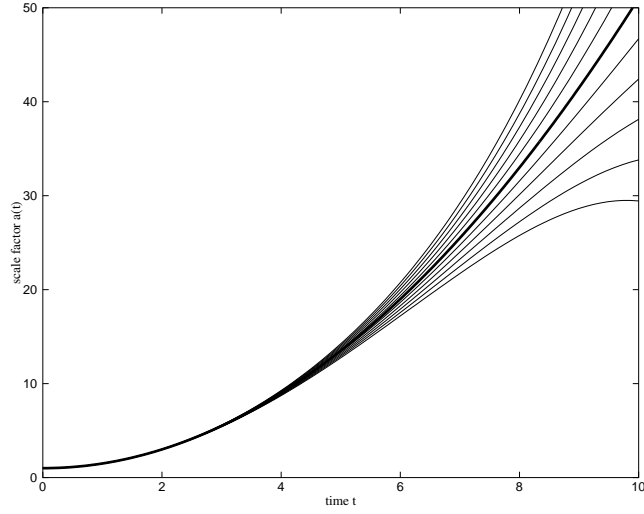
Example 20 *For negative curvature $k = -1$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 4 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$ and $b_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = a_0 e^{-\sigma}$, $P(\sigma) = 0$ and $E = -1$. By (E.28) - (E.30) with $r_0 = 1$ we obtain $\sigma(t) = \ln(a_0(t - t_0))$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = (t - t_0) \tag{3.131}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, we get $\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0$ for constant $\psi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.31) and (E.30), we obtain constant potential $V(\phi(t)) = -\Lambda/\kappa$.

For $a_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows four orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 17. Instability of FRLW Example 20
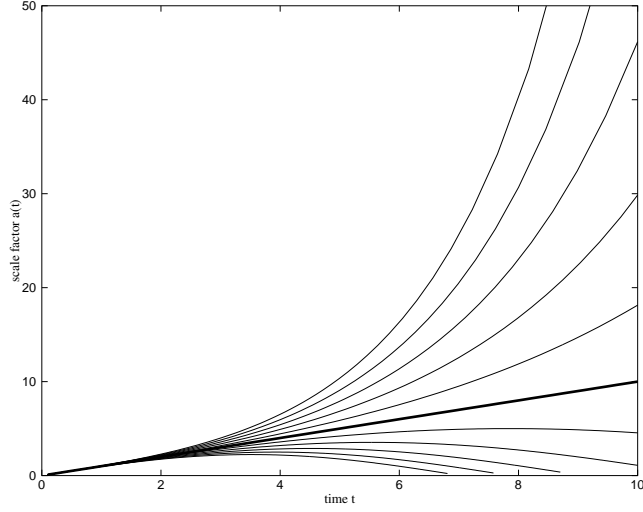
Example 21 *For negative curvature $k = -1$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 4 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$ and $a_0, b_0 > 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = a_0 e^{-\sigma} - b_0 e^{\sigma}$, $P(\sigma) = 0$ and $E = -1$. By (E.32) - (E.34) we obtain $\sigma(t) = \ln\left(\sqrt{\frac{a_0}{b_0}} \tanh(\sqrt{a_0 b_0}(t - t_0))\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = \frac{1}{2\sqrt{a_0 b_0}} \ sinh(2\sqrt{a_0 b_0}(t - t_0)) \tag{3.132}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, we have that $\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0$ for constant $\psi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.35) and (E.34), we obtain constant potential

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left((u')^2 - u^2\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t) \\
&= \frac{2d(d-1)}{\kappa} a_0 b_0 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.133}
$$

since $coth^2(x) - csch^2(x) = 1$.

Example 22 *For arbitrary curvature k and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 5 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$ and $b_0 = k + 1$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = (a_0/\sigma)e^{-\sigma^2/2}$, $P(\sigma) = \sigma^2 + 2/\sigma^2 + (k + 1)$ and $E = k$ for $a_0 > 0$. By (E.36) - (E.38) we obtain $\sigma(t) = \sqrt{2\ln(a_0(t - t_0))}$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = \sqrt{2}(t - t_0)\sqrt{\ln(a_0(t - t_0))} \tag{3.134}$$

64

for $t > 1/a_0 + t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (E.41) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) \;=\;& \psi(\sigma(t)) \\
=\;& \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa}} \left(\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) + (k+1)\ln(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1} \right. \\
& + \ln\left[2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))\right] - \ln\left[2(1+k)\ln(a_0(t-t_0)) + 4 \right. \\
& \left. + 4\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) + (1+k)\ln(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1}\right] \\
& -\frac{(1+k)}{\sqrt{2}} \ln\left[2\sqrt{2}\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) + (1+k)\ln(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1} \right. \\
& \left. -(1+k) - 4\ln(a_0(t-t_0))\right]\right) + \beta_0
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.135}
$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.39) and (E.38), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) \;=\;& \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left((u')^2 + ku^2\right) - \frac{u^2(\psi')^2}{2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t) \tag{3.136} \\
=\;& \frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa(t-t_0)^2}\left(d\left(1 + \frac{1}{2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}\right)^2 + \frac{dk}{2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}\right. \\
& \left. -\frac{\left[2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1 + (k+1)\ln(a_0(t-t_0))\right]}{2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0))}\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
$$

For $a_0 = k = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows up to four orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval. Since $E - P(\sigma)$ is independent of k, the below graph is also applicable to $k = 0, -1$.

Figure 18. Instability of FRLW Example 22
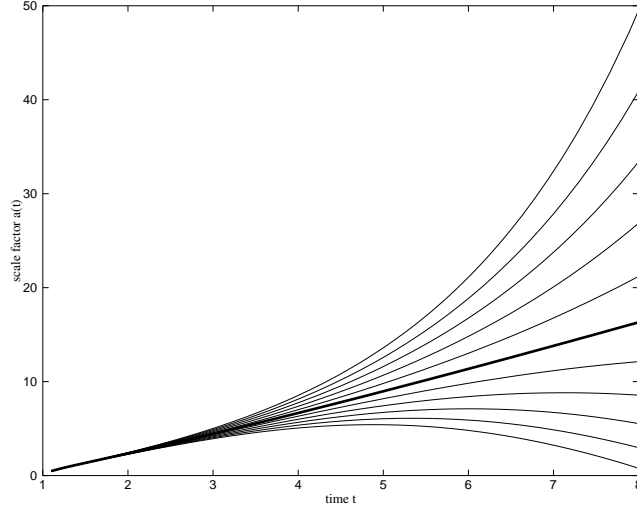
Example 23 *For positive curvature $k = 1$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 5 in Table 15 with $c_0 = 0$ and $a_0 = b_0 = 1$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = 1/\sigma$, $P(\sigma) = 2/\sigma^2 + 1$ and $E = 1$. By (E.42) - (E.44) with $r_0 = 1$ we obtain $\sigma(t) = \sqrt{2(t - t_0)}$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = \sqrt{2(t - t_0)} \tag{3.137}$$

for $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (E.47) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$, we have

$$\phi(t) = \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{\kappa}} \left(\sqrt{g(t)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \ln\left[2(t - t_0)\right] - \sqrt{2} \ln\left[\sqrt{2} + \sqrt{g(t)}\right] \right) + \beta_0$$

for $g(t) = 2(t - t_0) + 2$ and $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.45) and (E.44), we get

$$V(\phi(t)) = \frac{(d-1)}{4\kappa} \left(\frac{(d-2)}{2(t - t_0)^2} + \frac{(d-1)}{(t - t_0)} \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{3.138}$$

For $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .01. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

66

Figure 19. Instability of FRLW Example 23
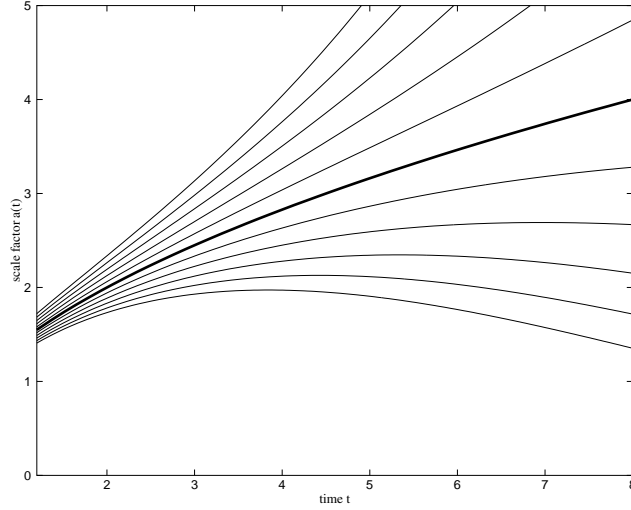
Example 24 *For zero curvature $k = 0$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 5 in Table 15 with $b_0 = c_0 = 0$ and $a_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = 1/\sigma$, $P(\sigma) = 2/\sigma^2$ and $E = 0$. By (E.42) - (E.44) with $r_0 = 1$ we obtain $\sigma(t) = \sqrt{2(t - t_0)}$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = \sqrt{2(t - t_0)} \tag{3.139}$$

for $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (E.47) with $\alpha_0 = (d - 1)/\kappa$ and $b_0 = 0$, we have

$$\phi(t) = \sqrt{\frac{(d - 1)}{2\kappa}} \ln\left[2(t - t_0)\right] + \beta_0$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.45) and (E.44), we obtain

$$V(\phi(t)) = \frac{(d - 1)(d - 2)}{8\kappa(t - t_0)^2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{3.140}$$

For $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows up to three orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 20. Instability of FRLW Example 24
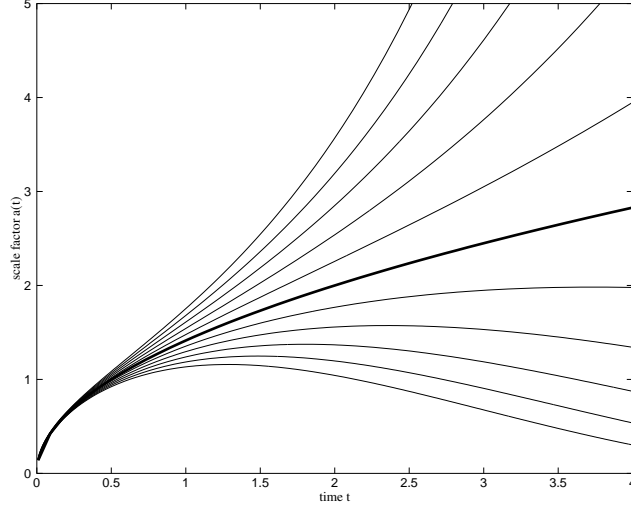
Example 25 *We take solution 7 in Table 15 with $c_0 = k\theta^2$ and $b_0 > 0$ and $a_0 > 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = a_0/\sigma^{b_0}$, $P(\sigma) = b_0(b_0+1)/\sigma^2 + k\theta^2$ and $E = k\theta^2$. By (E.54) - (E.56) we obtain*

$$\sigma(t) = \frac{A^{1/b_0}}{a_0}(t - t_0)^{1/(1+b_0)} \tag{3.141}$$

and

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = A(t - t_0)^{b_0/(b_0+1)} \tag{3.142}$$

for $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $A \overset{def.}{=} \frac{1}{a_0}\left(\frac{(1+b_0)a_0}{\theta}\right)^{b_0/(1+b_0)}$. Then by (E.59) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) \;=\; & \beta_0 + \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{\kappa}}\left(\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1) + k\theta^2\sigma(t)^2}\right. \\
& \left. -\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1)}\log\left(\frac{\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1)} + \sqrt{b_0(b_0+1) + k\theta^2\sigma(t)^2}}{\sigma(t)}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
\tag{3.143}
$$

for $\sigma(t)$ in (3.141). Also by (3.117), (E.56) and (E.57), we obtain potential

$$V(\phi(t)) \;=\; -\frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} + \frac{B^2}{2(t-t_0)^2}\left(\frac{((d-1)b_0-1)}{(1+b_0)} + \frac{k(d-1)(1+b_0)}{b_0 A^2(t-t_0)^{-2/(1+b_0)}}\right) \tag{3.144}$$

for $B^2 \overset{def.}{=} \frac{(d-1)b_0}{(1+b_0)\kappa}$.

68

By taking $d = 3$, $\Lambda = t_0 = 0$, $\theta = a_0(1 + b_0)$ and identifying $b_0/(b_0 + 1)$ here with

n in [13], we obtain example 4.4 of Ellis and Madsen for $0 < n < 1$. Note that the

above form of $\phi(t)$ is the integrated version of $\phi(t)$ in [13]. Since $\phi(t)$ in (3.143)

and has the property that

$$\dot{\phi}(t)^2 = \frac{B^2}{(t - t_0)^2} \left(1 + \frac{k\theta^2 (a_0 A)^{2/b_0}}{b_0(b_0 + 1)} (t - t_0)^{2/(1+b_0)} \right), \qquad (3.145)$$

we are in agreement with [13] for the above choice of θ. Also note that there is

a typo in equation (45) of [13], where one should multiply V by $1/4$ to obtain the

correct V with a two appearing in the denominator instead of the numerator. In

contrast to example 3 in this thesis, this example generalizes the Ellis and Madsen

example for nonzero curvature.

For $a_0 = b_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by

.001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error

grows three orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval. Since $E - P(\sigma)$

is independent of k, the below graph is applicable to all values of the curvature

$k = 1, 0, -1$.

Figure 21. Instability of FRLW Example 25
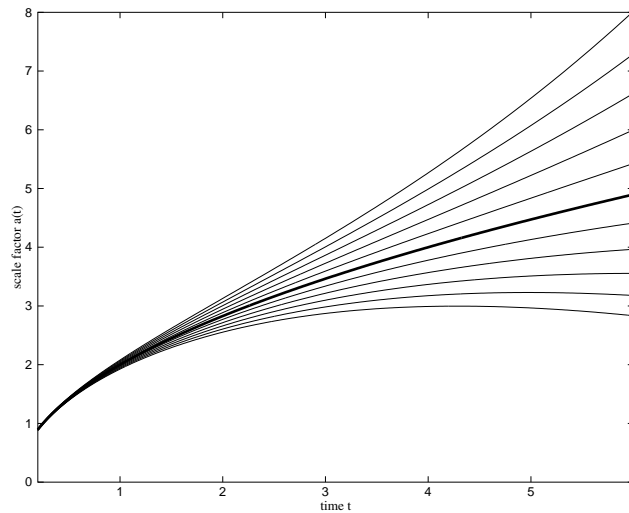
3.2.2 A nonlinear Schrödinger example

Example 26 *We consider equation (3.97) with $\rho = \mathrm{p} = 0$, $M = k = \theta = 1$, $n = 4$ and $D_1(\sigma) = D > 0$ a constant. For solution 3 in Table 15 with $a_0 = \sqrt{\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa D}}b_0$, $c_0 = 1 - 2b_0^2$ and $b_0 > 0$ chosen such that $c_0 > 0$, we have $u(\sigma) = a_0 \tanh(b_0\sigma)$ and $P(\sigma) = c_0$. By (E.22) - (E.24) we obtain $\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{b_0}Arcsinh\left(e^{a_0 b_0(t-t_0)}\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))} = \frac{\sqrt{1 + e^{2a_0 b_0(t-t_0)}}}{a_0 e^{a_0 b_0(t-t_0)}} \tag{3.146}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (E.27) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/\kappa$, we get

$$\phi(t) \;=\; \psi(\sigma(t)) = \frac{\sqrt{(d-1)(1 - 2b_0^2)}}{b_0\sqrt{\kappa}}Arcsinh\left(e^{a_0 b_0(t-t_0)}\right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.147}$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.106) and (E.25) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) \;&=\; \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left((u')^2 + u^2\right) - \frac{1}{2}u^2(\psi')^2 - Du^4 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t). \\
&=\; \frac{a_0^2(d-1)}{2\kappa(1 + e^{2a_0 b_0(t-t_0)})^2}\left[\left((d-1)(1 - b_0^2) + b_0^2\right)e^{4a_0 b_0(t-t_0)}\right. \\
&\qquad \left. + \left(d - 1 + 2b_0^2\right)e^{2a_0 b_0(t-t_0)} + db_0^2\right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$\tag{3.148}$$

For $a_0 = 1, b_0 = 1/2$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 22. Instability of FRLW Example 26
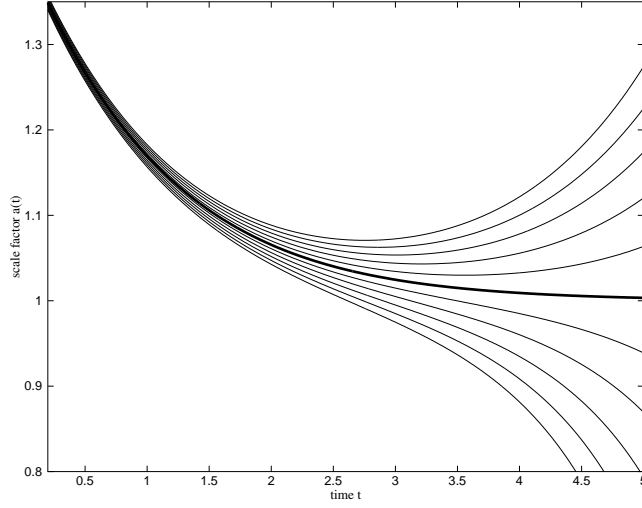
3.3 In terms of an Alternate Schrödinger-Type Equation

Theorem 3.3.1 $\left(\text{Apply Corollary 2.3.1 with } \frac{G(t)}{a(t)^A} = -\frac{\kappa n_j D_j(t)}{d(d-1)a(t)^{n_j}}\right)$

Suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $a(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $D_i(t), \rho'(t), p'(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(i), (ii)$ in (3.5) for some $k, n_1, \ldots, n_M, \Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0,1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ and $M \in \mathbb{N}$. Let $g(\sigma)$ denote the inverse of a function $\sigma(t)$ which satisfies

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta}a(t)^{-n_j/2} \tag{3.149}$$

for some $\theta > 0$ and where j is some index for which $n_j \neq 0$. Then the functions

$$u(\sigma) = a(g(\sigma))^{-n_j/2} \tag{3.150}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{n_j\kappa}{2(d-1)}\psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{3.151}$$

solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + \left[\frac{-\theta^2 n_j^2 \kappa}{2d(d-1)}D_j(\sigma) - P(\sigma)\right]u(\sigma) = \frac{-\theta^2 n_j k}{2u(\sigma)^{1-\frac{4}{n_j}}} + \sum_{\substack{1 \leq i \leq M \\ i \neq j}} \frac{\theta^2 n_j n_i \kappa D_i(\sigma)}{2d(d-1)u(\sigma)^{1-2\frac{n_i}{n_j}}}$$

$$+\frac{\theta^2 n_j \kappa(\rho(\sigma)+\mathrm{p}(\sigma))}{2(d-1)u(\sigma)} \tag{3.152}$$

for

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(g(\sigma)) \tag{3.153}$$

$$\mathrm{D}_i(\sigma) = D_i(g(\sigma)), \quad 1 \le i \le M \tag{3.154}$$

and

$$\rho(\sigma) = \rho'(g(\sigma)), \ \mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p'(g(\sigma)). \tag{3.155}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$, and also functions $P(\sigma), \mathrm{D}_i(\sigma)$ for $1 \le i \le M, M \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\rho(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$ which solve (3.152) for some constants $\theta > 0, k \in \mathbb{R}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}, d \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0,1\}$ and $n_i \in \mathbb{R}$ for $1 \le i \le M$. In order to construct functions which solve (i), (ii), first find $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma)$ which solve the differential equations

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta}u(\sigma(t)) \qquad and \qquad \psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{2(d-1)}{n_j \kappa}P(\sigma). \tag{3.156}$$

Then the functions

$$a(t) = u(\sigma(t))^{-2/n_j} \tag{3.157}$$

$$\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t)) \tag{3.158}$$

$$D_i(t) = \mathrm{D}_i(\sigma(t)), 1 \le i \le M, \tag{3.159}$$

$$\rho'(t) = \rho(\sigma(t)), \ p'(t) = \mathrm{p}(\sigma(t)) \tag{3.160}$$

and

$V(\phi(t))$

$$= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(\frac{4}{n_j^2\theta^2}(u')^2 + \frac{k}{u^{-4/n_j}}\right) - \frac{1}{2\theta^2}u^2(\psi')^2 - \sum_{i=1}^{M}\frac{\mathrm{D}_i}{u^{-2n_i/n_j}} - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t) \tag{3.161}$$

satisfy the equations (i), (ii).

Proof. This proof will implement Corollary 2.3.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 3. Corollary 2.3.1 applied to FRLW, alternate

In Corollary	substitute	In Corollary	substitute
ε	$\kappa/(d-1)$	$E(\sigma)$	$-\frac{\theta^2 n_j^2 \kappa}{2d(d-1)} \mathrm{D}_j(\sigma)$
$G(t)$	$\frac{-n_j \kappa}{d(d-1)} D_j(t)$	A	some $n_j \neq 0$
$G_i(t), 1 \leq i \leq M, i \neq j$	$\frac{-n_i \kappa}{d(d-1)} D_i(t)$	$A_{i \neq j}$	n_i
$G_j(t)$	k	A_j	2
$G_{M+1}(t)$	$\frac{-\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho'(t) + p'(t))$	A_{M+1}	0
$F_i(\sigma), 1 \leq i \leq M, i \neq j$	$\frac{\theta^2 n_j n_i \kappa}{2d(d-1)} \mathrm{D}_i(\sigma)$	$C_{i \neq j}$	$1 - 2\frac{n_i}{n_j}$
$F_j(\sigma)$	$-\theta^2 n_j k/2$	C_j	$1 - \frac{4}{n_j}$
$F_{M+1}(\sigma)$	$\frac{\theta^2 n_j \kappa}{2(d-1)}(\rho(\sigma) + \mathrm{p}(\sigma))$	C_{M+1}	1

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations (i) and (ii) from (3.5). Subtracting equations $(ii) - (i)$, we see that

$$\dot{H}(t) - \frac{k}{a(t)^2} = -\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + \sum_{i=1}^{M} \frac{n_i D_i(t)}{da(t)^{n_i}} + (\rho'(t) + p'(t))\right]. \qquad (3.162)$$

This shows that $a(t), \phi(t), D_i(t), \rho'(t)$ and $p'(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with constants $\varepsilon, N, A, A_1 \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G(t), G_1(t) \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 3. Since $\sigma(t), u(\sigma), P(\sigma)$ and $\psi(\sigma)$ defined in (3.149), (3.150), (3.151) and (3.153) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Corollary 2.3.1, by this theorem and by definitions (3.154) and (3.155) of $\mathrm{D}_i(\sigma)$ and $\rho(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$, the Schrödinger-type equation (2.110) holds for constants $C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 3. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation (3.152) and we begin by showing that (i) is satisfied. By differentiating the definition (3.157) of $a(t)$ and using the definition of $\sigma(t)$ in (3.156), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{a}(t) &= -\frac{2}{n_j} u(\sigma(t))^{-2/n_j-1} u'(\sigma(t)) \dot{\sigma}(t) \\
&= -\frac{2}{n_j \theta} u(\sigma(t))^{-2/n_j} u'(\sigma(t)).
\end{aligned} \tag{3.163}
$$

Dividing by $a(t)$, we have that

$$
H(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}(t)}{a(t)} = -\frac{2}{n_j \theta} u'(\sigma(t)). \tag{3.164}
$$

Differentiating the definition (3.158) of $\phi(t)$ and using definition in (3.156) of $\sigma(t)$, we have

$$
\dot{\phi}(t) = \psi'(\sigma(t)) \dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta} \psi'(\sigma(t)) u(\sigma(t)). \tag{3.165}
$$

Using (3.164) and (3.165), and also the definitions (3.157), (3.159) and (3.160) of $a(t), D_i(t)$ and $\rho'(t), p'(t)$, the definition (3.161) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$
V(\phi(t)) = \frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa} \left(H(t)^2 + \frac{k}{a(t)^2} \right) - \frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}(t)^2 - \sum_{i=1}^{M} \frac{D_i(t)}{a(t)^{n_i}} - \rho'(t) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{3.166}
$$

This shows that (i) holds (that is, the definition of $V(\phi(t))$ was designed to be such that (i) holds).

To conclude the proof we must also show that (ii) holds. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Corollary 2.3.1 holds, applied with constants $N, C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $E(\sigma), F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 3. Since $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma), a(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (3.156), (3.157) and (3.158) are consistent with the converse implication of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with ε and A as in Table 3, by this corollary and by definitions (3.159) and (3.160) of $D_i(t)$ and $\rho'(t), p'(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.109) holds for constants $\varepsilon, A, A_1, \ldots, A_N$ and functions

$G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 3. That is, we have regained (3.162) which shows that the subtraction of equations (ii)-(i) holds in the converse direction. Now solving (3.166) for $\rho'(t)$ and substituting this into (3.162), we obtain (ii). This proves the theorem. $\diamond$

3.3.1 Reduction to linear Schrödinger: zero curvature

To compute some examples, we take $k = 0$ and $\rho' = p' = D_i = 0$ for all $i \neq j$ and also $n_j = n$, $D_j = D > 0$ so that Theorem 3.3.1 shows that solving the Einstein equations

$$\frac{d}{2}H^2(t) \stackrel{(i)''''}{=} \frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 + V(\phi(t)) + \frac{D}{a(t)^n}\right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)} \tag{3.167}$$

$$\dot{H}(t) + \frac{d}{2}H(t)^2 \stackrel{(ii)''''}{=} -\frac{\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}(t)^2 - V(\phi(t)) + \frac{(n-d)D}{da(t)^n}\right] + \frac{\Lambda}{(d-1)}$$

is equivalent to solving the linear Schrödinger equation

$$u''(\sigma) + \left[\frac{-\theta^2 n^2 \kappa D}{2d(d-1)} - P(\sigma)\right]u(\sigma) = 0$$

for any constant $\theta > 0$. The solutions of $(i)''''$, $(ii)''''$ and (3.168) are related by

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^{2/n}} \quad \text{and} \quad \psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{2(d-1)}{n\kappa}P(\sigma) \tag{3.168}$$

for $\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t))$ and

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta a(t)^{n/2}} = \frac{1}{\theta}u(\sigma(t)). \tag{3.169}$$

Also in the converse direction, V is taken to be

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{2d(d-1)(u')^2}{\kappa n^2 \theta^2} - \frac{1}{2\theta^2}u^2(\psi')^2 - Du^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t). \tag{3.170}$$

We now refer to Appendix E for solutions of the linear Schrödinger equation (3.168). We will map these solutions to exact solutions of Einstein's equations. Since $E = \frac{-\theta^2 n^2 \kappa D}{2d(d-1)} < 0$, we only consider entries in Table 15 for which $E < 0$.

Example 27 *For $\theta = 1$ and choice of constant $D = \frac{2d(d-1)}{n^2\kappa}$, we take solution 4 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$ and $b_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = a_0 e^{-\sigma}$, $P(\sigma) = 0$ and $E = -1$. By (E.28) - (E.30) with $r_0 = 1$ we obtain $\sigma(t) = \ln\left(a_0(t-t_0)\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^{2/n}} = (t-t_0)^{2/n} \tag{3.171}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, the scalar field is constant $\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.170), (E.31) and (E.30), we obtain constant potential

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{2d(d-1)(u')^2}{n^2\kappa} - \frac{2d(d-1)}{n^2\kappa}u^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t) \\
&= -\frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{3.172}
\end{aligned}
$$

For $a_0 = 1, n = 3$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows at least two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval. Since u is independent of n, $a(t)$ is unstable for all values of n.

Figure 23. Instability of FRLW Example 27
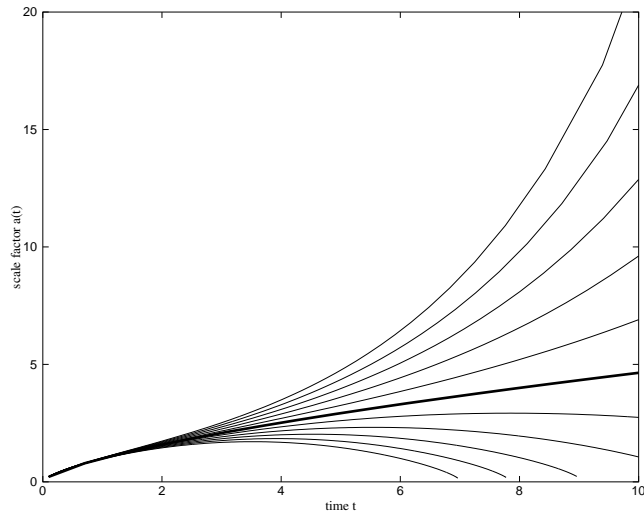
Example 28 *For $\theta = 1$ and choice of constant $D = \frac{2d(d-1)}{n^2\kappa}$, we take solution 4 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$ and $a_0, b_0 > 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = a_0 e^{-\sigma} - b_0 e^{\sigma}$, $P(\sigma) = 0$ and $E = -1$. By (E.32) - (E.34) we obtain $\sigma(t) = \ln\left(\sqrt{\frac{a_0}{b_0}}\tanh(\sqrt{a_0 b_0}(t - t_0))\right)$ and*

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^{2/n}} = \frac{1}{(2\sqrt{a_0 b_0})^{2/n}} \sinh^{2/n}(2\sqrt{a_0 b_0}(t - t_0)) \tag{3.173}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, the scalar field is constant

$$\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0 \in \mathbb{R} \tag{3.174}$$

Finally, by (3.170), (E.35) and (E.34), we obtain constant potential

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{2d(d-1)(u')^2}{n^2\kappa} - \frac{2d(d-1)}{n^2\kappa}u^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t) \\
&= \frac{8d(d-1)a_0 b_0}{n^2\kappa} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{3.175}
\end{aligned}
$$

since $\coth^2(x) - \operatorname{csch}^2(x) = 1$.

Example 29 *For $\theta = 1$ and choice of constant $D = 2d(d-1)/n^2\kappa$, we take solution 5 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$ and $b_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = (a_0/\sigma)e^{-\sigma^2/2}$, $P(\sigma) = \sigma^2 + 2/\sigma^2$ and $E = -1$ for $a_0 > 0$. By (E.36) - (E.38) we obtain $\sigma(t) = \sqrt{2\ln(a_0(t - t_0))}$ and*

$$
\begin{aligned}
a(t) &= \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^{2/n}} \\
&= \left(\sqrt{2}(t - t_0)\sqrt{\ln(a_0(t - t_0))}\right)^{2/n} \\
&= \left(2(t - t_0)^2 \ln(a_0(t - t_0))\right)^{1/n} \tag{3.176}
\end{aligned}
$$

for $t > t_0$. Then by (E.41) with $\alpha_0 = 2(d - 1)/n\kappa$, we obtain scalar field

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= \psi(\sigma(t)) \\
&= \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{n\kappa}}\left(\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t - t_0)) + 1} + \ln\left[2\ln(a_0(t - t_0))\right]\right. \\
&\quad \left. - \ln\left[4 + 4\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t - t_0)) + 1}\right]\right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.177}
\end{aligned}
$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.39) and (E.38), we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{2d(d-1)}{n^2\kappa}(u')^2 - \frac{1}{2}u^2(\psi')^2 - Du^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \sigma(t) \\
&= \frac{(d-1)}{2n\kappa(t-t_0)^2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0))} \cdot \\
&\quad \left(-2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) - 1 \right. \\
&\quad \left. + \frac{d}{n}\left((2\ln(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1)^2 - 2\ln(a_0(t-t_0)) \right) \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$(3.178)$$

For $a_0 = 1, n = 3$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows three orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval. Since u is independent of n, $a(t)$ is unstable for all values of n.

Figure 24. Instability of FRLW Example 29
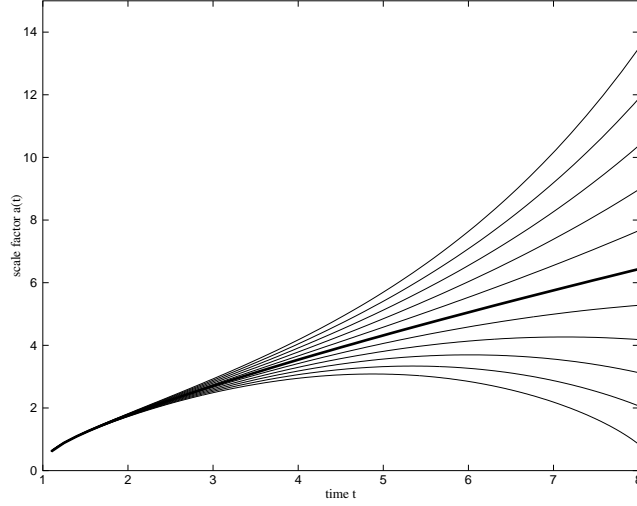
Example 30 *For $C \overset{def.}{=} \frac{n^2\kappa D}{2d(d-1)}$ and $\theta = 1$, we take solution 6 in Table 15 with $c_0 = 2b_0^2 - C$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = -a_0\cosh^2(b_0\sigma)$, $P(\sigma) = 2b_0^2\tanh^2(b_0\sigma) + c_0 = 2b_0^2\tanh^2(b_0\sigma) + 2b_0^2 - C$ and $E = -C$. By (E.48) - (E.50) we obtain $\sigma(t) =$*

$\frac{-1}{b_0}Arctanh\,(a_0 b_0(t-t_0))$ and

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^{2/n}} = \left(\frac{1}{a_0}\left(a_0^2 b_0^2(t-t_0)^2 - 1\right)\right)^{2/n} \tag{3.179}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (E.53) with $\alpha_0 = 2(d-1)/n\kappa$, the scalar field is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= \psi(\sigma(t)) \\
&= \pm\left(\sqrt{\frac{4(d-1)}{n\kappa}}\ln\left[2\left(\sqrt{2b_0^4 a_0^2(t-t_0)^2 + 2b_0^2 - C} - \sqrt{2}b_0^2 a_0(t-t_0)\right)\right] \right. \\
&\quad \left. + \frac{1}{b_0}\sqrt{\frac{2(d-1)}{n\kappa}}\sqrt{4b_0^2 - C}\,Arctanh\left[\frac{\sqrt{4b_0^2 - C}a_0 b_0(t-t_0)}{\sqrt{2b_0^4 a_0^2(t-t_0)^2 + 2b_0^2 - C}}\right]\right) + \beta_0
\end{aligned}
$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.117), (E.50) and (E.51), we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{2d(d-1)(u')^2}{\kappa n^2} - \frac{1}{2}u^2(\psi')^2 - Du^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right]\circ\sigma(t). \\
&= \frac{a_0^2(d-1)\left[(4d-n)2a_0^2 b_0^4(t-t_0)^2 - 2nb_0^2 + C(n-2d)\right]}{\kappa n^2(a_0^2 b_0^2(t-t_0)^2 - 1)^2} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned} \tag{3.180}
$$

One can compare this to the solutions in [23] and in section 5 of [15].

3.3.2 A nonlinear Schrödinger example

Example 31 For $D_j = \rho = \mathrm{p} = 0$ and $D_i = 0$ for all i, we take $n_j = 4, \theta = 1$ and positive curvature $k = 1$. We use solution 2 in Table 15 with $a_0 = 1/b_0^2$ and $b_0 > 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = \frac{1}{b_0^2}\cos^2(b_0\sigma)$. Using the second potential for solution 2 in the table, we have $P(\sigma) = 4b_0^2\tan^2(b_0\sigma)$ and $F_1 = -2$. By (E.14)-(E.16) we have $\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{b_0}Arctan\left(\frac{\theta}{b_0}(t-t_0)\right)$ and

$$a(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^{1/2}} = \sqrt{b_0^2 + (t-t_0)^2} \tag{3.181}$$

for $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Then by (E.21) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/2\kappa$, we obtain scalar field

$$\phi(t) = \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa}}\ln\left(1 + \frac{1}{b_0^2}(t-t_0)^2\right) + \beta_0 \tag{3.182}$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (3.161), (E.16) and (E.17) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa} \left(\frac{1}{4}(u')^2 + u \right) - \frac{1}{2}u^2(\psi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \sigma(t) \\
&= \frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa} \left(\frac{db_0^2 + 2(d-1)(t-t_0)^2}{(b_0^2 + (t-t_0)^2)^2} \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned}
$$

(3.183)

Composing $V(\phi(t))$ with the inverse

$$
\phi^{-1}(w) = b_0 \sqrt{e^{\sqrt{2\kappa/(d-1)}(w - \beta_0)} - 1} + t_0
$$

(3.184)

for $w \geq \beta_0$, we obtain the potential

$$
V(w) = C_1 e^{-\sqrt{2\kappa/(d-1)}w} - C_2 e^{-2\sqrt{2\kappa/(d-1)}w} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
$$

(3.185)

for constants

$$
C_1 = \frac{(d-1)^2}{\kappa b_0^2} e^{\sqrt{2\kappa/(d-1)}\beta_0} \quad and \quad C_2 = \frac{(d-1)(d-2)}{2\kappa b_0^2} e^{2\sqrt{2\kappa/(d-1)}\beta_0}.
$$

(3.186)

By taking $d = 3, t_0 = 0$, and identifying a_0, κ and β_0 here with b_0, K^2 and ϕ_0 respectively in the Ozer and Taha paper, we obtain the string-inspired solution I of [26]. One can check that the conditions on the constants C_1, C_2 in [26] (with $d = 3$) agree with the example here since we have

$$
b_0^2 = \frac{2(d-1)^3 C_2}{(d-2)\kappa C_1^2} \quad and \quad \beta_0 = \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa}} \ln \left(\frac{2(d-1)C_2}{(d-2)C_1} \right).
$$

(3.187)

For $b_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $a(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows by three orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 25. Instability of FRLW Example 31
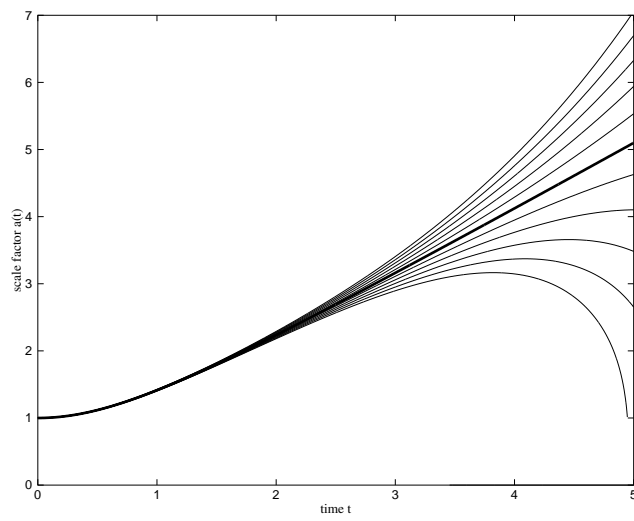
C H A P T E R   4

REFORMULATIONS OF A BIANCHI I MODEL

For the homogeneous, anisotropic Bianchi I metric

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + X_1^2(t)dx_1^2 + \cdots + X_d^2(t)dx_d^2 \tag{4.1}$$

in a $d + 1$-dimensional spacetime for $d \neq 0, 1$, the nonzero Einstein equations $g^{ij}G_{ij} = -\kappa g^{ij}T_{ij} + \Lambda$ are

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \stackrel{(I_0)}{=} \kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + V \circ \phi + \rho \right] + \Lambda \tag{4.2}$$

$$\sum_{l \neq 1}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq 1}} H_l H_k \stackrel{(I_1)}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda$$

$$\vdots$$

$$\sum_{l \neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k \stackrel{(I_i)}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda$$

$$\vdots$$

$$\sum_{l \neq d}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq d}} H_l H_k \stackrel{(I_d)}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda$$

where $H_l(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \dot{a}_l/a_l$ and $i, l, k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$.

4.1 In terms of a Generalized EMP

Theorem 4.1.1 *Suppose you are given twice differentiable functions* $X_1(t), \ldots, X_d(t) > 0$, *a once differentiable function* $\phi(t)$, *and also functions* $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ *which satisfy the Einstein equations* $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ *in (4.2) for some* $\Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N} \backslash \{0, 1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R} \backslash \{0\}$. *Denote*

$$R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))^\nu \tag{4.3}$$

for some $\nu \neq 0$. *If* $f(\tau)$ *is the inverse of a function* $\tau(t)$ *which satisfies*

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^q \tag{4.4}$$

for some constants $\theta > 0$ *and* $q \neq 0$, *then*

$$Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q \qquad and \qquad Q(\tau) = \frac{q\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \varphi'(\tau)^2 \tag{4.5}$$

solve the generalized EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{-2q\nu d\kappa D}{\theta^2(d-1)Y(\tau)^{(2+q\nu)/q\nu}} - \frac{q\nu d\kappa \, (\varrho(\tau) + \mathrm{p}(\tau))}{\theta^2(d-1)Y(\tau)} \tag{4.6}$$

for

$$\varphi(\tau) = \phi(f(\tau)) \tag{4.7}$$

$$\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau)), \ \mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau)) \tag{4.8}$$

and where

$$D \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{1}{2d\kappa} X_1^2 X_2^2 \cdots X_d^2 \left(\sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 \right) \tag{4.9}$$

is a constant for

$$\eta_{lk} \stackrel{def.}{=} H_l - H_k, \ l \neq k, l, \ k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}. \tag{4.10}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $Y(\tau) > 0$, *a continuous function* $Q(\tau)$, *and also functions* $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$ *which solve (4.6) for some*

constants $\theta > 0$ and $q, \nu, \kappa \in \mathbb{R} \backslash \{0\}, k, D \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N} \backslash \{0, 1\}$. In order to construct

functions which solve $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$, first find $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau)$ which solve the differential

equations

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t)) \qquad and \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{q\nu d\kappa} Q(\tau). \tag{4.11}$$

Next find a function $\sigma(t)$ such that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\dot{\tau}(t)^{1/q\nu}} \tag{4.12}$$

and let

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} \qquad \alpha_l(t) \stackrel{\text{def.}}{=} c_l \sigma(t), \; l \in \{1, \ldots, d\} \tag{4.13}$$

where c_l are any constants for which both

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad and \qquad \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = -\theta^{2/q\nu} D\kappa. \tag{4.14}$$

Then the functions

$$X_l(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)} \tag{4.15}$$

$$\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)) \tag{4.16}$$

$$\rho(t) = \varrho(\tau(t)), \; p(t) = \mathrm{p}(\tau(t)) \tag{4.17}$$

and

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)\theta^2}{2\nu^2 d\kappa q^2}(Y')^2 - \frac{D}{Y^{2/q\nu}} - \frac{\theta^2}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \varrho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \tag{4.18}$$

satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$.

Proof. This proof will implement Theorem 2.1.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 4.   Theorem 2.1.1 applied to Bianchi I

In Theorem	substitute	In Theorem	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	N	1
δ	0	ε	$\nu d\kappa/(d-1)$
$G_0(t)$	constant $-2\nu d\kappa D/(d-1)$	A_0	$2/\nu$
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t)+p(t))$	A_1	0
$\lambda_0(\tau)$	constant $-2q\nu d\kappa D/\theta^2(d-1)$	B_0	$(2+q\nu)/q\nu$
$\lambda_1(\tau)$	$\frac{-q\nu d\kappa}{\theta^2(d-1)}(\varrho(\tau)+\mathrm{p}(\tau))$	B_1	1

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0),\ldots,(I_d)$. Forming the linear combination $d(I_0)-\sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ of Einstein's equations, we obtain

$$d\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k - \sum_{i=1}^{d}\sum_{l\neq i}(\dot{H}_l+H_l^2) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}}H_lH_k = d\kappa\left[\dot{\phi}^2+(\rho+p)\right] \qquad (4.19)$$

where $l,k \in \{1,\ldots,d\}$. The second double sum on the left-hand side of (4.19) contains the quantity $(\dot{H}_l+H_l^2)$ $(d-1)$-times for any fixed l, and the third double sum contains the quantity H_lH_k $(d-2)$-times for any fixed l,k pair with $l<k$ so that we have

$$d\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k - (d-1)\sum_{l=1}^{d}(\dot{H}_l+H_l^2) - (d-2)\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k = d\kappa\left[\dot{\phi}^2+(\rho+p)\right]. \quad (4.20)$$

Collecting the first and third sums gives the equation

$$2\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k - (d-1)\sum_{l=1}^{d}(\dot{H}_l+H_l^2) = d\kappa\left[\dot{\phi}^2+(\rho+p)\right]. \qquad (4.21)$$

Using the definition (4.3) of $R(t)$, we define

$$H_R \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R} = \frac{\nu\,(X_1\cdots X_d)^{\nu-1}\left(\dot{X}_1X_2\cdots X_d+\cdots+X_1X_2\cdots \dot{X}_d\right)}{(X_1\cdots X_d)^{\nu}} = \nu\sum_{l=1}^{d}H_l.$$

$$(4.22)$$

Differentiating H_R shows that

$$\dot{H}_R = \nu \sum_{l=1}^{d} \dot{H}_l, \tag{4.23}$$

therefore (4.21) can be written as

$$2 \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - (d-1) \left(\frac{1}{\nu} \dot{H}_R + \sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l^2 \right) = d\kappa \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p) \right]. \tag{4.24}$$

Multiplying this by $\frac{-\nu}{(d-1)}$ and rearranging, we find that

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu}{(d-1)} \left((d-1) \sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l^2 - 2 \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \right) = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p) \right]. \tag{4.25}$$

Using the definition (4.10) of the quantities η_{lk}, we have that

$$\sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 = \sum_{l<k} \left(H_l^2 - 2 H_l H_k + H_k^2 \right). \tag{4.26}$$

The first and last terms on the right-hand side of (4.26) sum to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l<k} \left(H_l^2 + H_k^2 \right) &= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1} \sum_{k=l+1}^{d} H_l^2 + \sum_{k=2}^{d} \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} H_k^2 \\
&= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1} (d-l) H_l^2 + \sum_{k=2}^{d} (k-1) H_k^2 \\
&= (d-1) H_1^2 + \sum_{j=2}^{d-1} (d-j) H_j^2 + \sum_{j=2}^{d-1} (j-1) H_j^2 + (d-1) H_d^2 \\
&= (d-1) \sum_{j=1}^{d} H_j^2,
\end{aligned}
\tag{4.27}
$$

therefore (4.26) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 = (d-1) \sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l^2 - 2 \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k. \tag{4.28}$$

Using this to rewrite (4.25), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu}{(d-1)} \sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p) \right]. \tag{4.29}$$

86

Next we will confirm that D is a constant. Since the right-hand sides of Einstein equations (I_i) are the same for all $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$, by equating the left-hand sides of any two equations (I_i) and (I_j) for $i \neq j$, we get that

$$\sum_{l \neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \sum_{l \neq j}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l,k \neq j}} H_l H_k \tag{4.30}$$

where we recall that the sum indices $l, k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. For the first sum on each side of (4.30), the left and the right-hand sides of (4.30) contain all the same terms, except for the jth indexed term which appears on the left, and the ith indexed term which appears on the right. Therefore many terms cancel and we are left with

$$\dot{H}_j + H_j^2 + \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \dot{H}_i + H_i^2 + \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l,k \neq j}} H_l H_k. \tag{4.31}$$

For the second (double) sum on each side of (4.30), the left and right-hand sides of (4.31) contain all the same terms, except for the terms where either $l, k = j$ which appear on the left, and the terms where either $l, k = i$ which appear on the right. Therefore many terms cancel and by adding $H_j H_i$ to both sides we obtain

$$\dot{H}_j + H_j^2 + H_j \sum_{l \neq j} H_l = \dot{H}_i + H_i^2 + H_i \sum_{l \neq i} H_l, \tag{4.32}$$

or equivalently

$$\dot{\eta}_{ij} + \frac{1}{\nu}\eta_{ij} H_R = 0 \tag{4.33}$$

where we have used the expression (4.22) for H_R, the definition (4.10) of η_{ij}, and as usual dot denotes differentiation with respect to t. By Lemma A.1 with $\mu = 1/\nu \neq 0$ (which applies since $R(t)$ is positive and differentiable), (4.33) shows that the function $f = \eta_{ij} R^{1/\nu} = \eta_{ij} X_1 X_2 \cdots X_d$ is constant for any pair i, j (for the pair $i = j$, f is clearly a constant function, namely zero). Therefore the definition (4.9) of D is also constant, being proportional to a sum of squares of these constant

87

functions. By the definitions (4.9) and (4.3) of the constant D and the function $R(t)$, we now rewrite (4.29) as

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + \frac{2D}{R^{2/\nu}} + (\rho + p) \right].$$ (4.34)

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Theorem 2.1.1, applied with constants $\epsilon, \varepsilon, N, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 4. Since $\tau(t), Y(\tau), Q(\tau)$ and $\varphi(\tau)$ defined in (4.4), (4.5) and (4.7) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Theorem 2.1.1, by this theorem and by definition (4.8) of $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$, the generalized EMP equation (2.2) holds for constants $B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 4. This proves the forward implication.

Note that equation (4.34) with $\nu = 1/d$ is the same as the FRLW analogue equation (3.18) with $M = 1$, $n_1 = 2d$, $k = 0$ and by identifying $R(t)$ here with $a(t)$ in the FRLW model. One can compare this observation with J. Lidsey's results on the $3 + 1$-dimensional Bianchi I model in [22].

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the generalized EMP equation (4.6) and we begin by showing that (I_0) is satisfied. Differentiating the definition of $R(t)$ in (4.13) and using the definition in (4.11) of $\tau(t)$, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \dot{R}(t) &= \frac{1}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{\frac{1}{q}-1} Y'(\tau(t)) \dot{\tau}(t) \\ &= \frac{\theta}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} Y'(\tau(t)). \end{aligned}$$ (4.35)

so that

$$H_R(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)} = \frac{\theta}{q} Y'(\tau(t)).$$ (4.36)

Differentiating the definition (4.16) of $\phi(t)$ and using the definition (4.11) of $\tau(t)$ gives

$$\dot{\phi}(t) = \varphi'(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta\varphi'(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t)). \qquad (4.37)$$

Using (4.36) and (4.37), and also the definitions (4.13) and (4.17) of $R(t)$ and $\rho(t)$ respectively, the definition (4.18) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa}\left(\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d}H_R^2 - \frac{D\kappa}{R^{2/\nu}}\right) - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \qquad (4.38)$$

The quantity in parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, we differentiate the definition (4.15) of $X_l(t)$, divide the result by X_l and use the definition (4.36) of H_R to obtain

$$H_l \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{X}_l}{X_l} = \frac{\frac{1}{\nu d}R^{1/\nu d-1}\dot{R}e^{\alpha_l} + \dot{\alpha}_l R^{1/\nu d}e^{\alpha_l}}{R^{1/\nu d}e^{\alpha_l}} = \frac{1}{\nu d}H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l \qquad (4.39)$$

so that

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \sum_{l<k}\left(\frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2}H_R^2 + \frac{1}{\nu d}(\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k)H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l\dot{\alpha}_k\right). \qquad (4.40)$$

The first term on the right-hand side of (4.40) does not depend on the indices l, k, and is therefore equal to $\frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2}H_R^2$ times the quantity

$$\sum_{l<k} 1 = \sum_{k=2}^{d}\sum_{l=1}^{k-1} 1 = \sum_{k=2}^{d}(k-1) = \sum_{j=1}^{d-1} j = \frac{d(d-1)}{2}. \qquad (4.41)$$

The second term on the right-hand side of (4.40) sums to zero since

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l<k}(\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) &= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1}\sum_{k=l+1}^{d}\dot{\alpha}_l + \sum_{k=2}^{d}\sum_{l=1}^{k-1}\dot{\alpha}_k \\
&= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1}(d-l)\dot{\alpha}_l + \sum_{k=2}^{d}(k-1)\dot{\alpha}_k \\
&= (d-1)\dot{\alpha}_1 + \sum_{j=2}^{d-1}(d-j+j-1)\dot{\alpha}_j + (d-1)\dot{\alpha}_d \\
&= (d-1)\sum_{l=1}^{d}\dot{\alpha}_l
\end{aligned}$$

$$= (d-1)\sigma(t)\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l$$

$$= 0 \tag{4.42}$$

where on the last lines, we have used the definition (4.13) of $\alpha_l(t)$ and the condition (4.14) on the constants c_l. For the third term on the right-hand side of (4.40), we use the definitions of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t), \tau(t)$ and $R(t)$ in (4.13), (4.12) and (4.11) to write

$$\dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k = c_l c_k \dot{\sigma}^2 = \frac{c_l c_k}{\dot{\tau}^{2/q\nu}} = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu}(Y \circ \tau)^{2/q\nu}} = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{4.43}$$

Therefore (4.40) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \sum_{l<k} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{4.44}$$

Then by the condition (4.14) on the constants c_l, (4.44) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{D\kappa}{R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{4.45}$$

That is, the expression (4.38) for V can now be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa} \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}, \tag{4.46}$$

showing that (I_0) holds under the assumptions of the converse implication.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Theorem 2.1.1 holds, applied with constants $N, B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 4. Since $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (4.11), (4.13) and (4.16) are consistent with the converse implication of Theorem 2.1.1, applied with $a(t), \delta$ and ε as in Table 4, by this theorem and by the definition (4.17) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.1) holds for constants $\delta, \varepsilon, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 4. That is, we have regained (4.34). Now

solving (4.38) for $\rho(t)$ and substituting this into (4.34), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + \frac{D}{R^{2/\nu}} + p + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d\kappa} H_R^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right]. \tag{4.47}$$

Multiplying by $\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}$ and rearranging, we get that

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{\kappa D}{R^{2/\nu}} = -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda \tag{4.48}$$

The left-hand side of this equation is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of (I_i) for any $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. To see this, first recall (4.39) and write

$$\dot{H}_l + H_l^2 = \frac{1}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \ddot{\alpha}_l + \frac{2}{\nu d} \dot{\alpha}_l H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l^2, \tag{4.49}$$

therefore for any fixed i

$$\sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) = \sum_{l \neq i} \left(\frac{1}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \ddot{\alpha}_l + \frac{2}{\nu d} \dot{\alpha}_l H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l^2 \right). \tag{4.50}$$

Since the first two terms on the right-hand side of (4.50) do not depend on the indices l, k, and also using the definitions (4.13) and (4.14) of α_l and the constants c_l to write $\sum_l \dot{\alpha}_l = 0 \Rightarrow \sum_{l \neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l = -\dot{\alpha}_i$, (4.50) becomes

$$\sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 - \frac{2}{\nu d} H_R \dot{\alpha}_i + \sum_{l \neq i} \left(\ddot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_l^2 \right). \tag{4.51}$$

By the definitions (4.13), (4.12) and (4.11) of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t), \tau(t)$ and $R(t)$, we see that

$$\begin{aligned}
\dot{\alpha}_l(t) R(t)^{1/\nu} &= c_l \dot{\sigma}(t) R(t)^{1/\nu} \\
&= \frac{c_l}{\dot{\tau}(t)^{1/q\nu}} R(t)^{1/\nu} \\
&= \frac{c_l}{\theta^{1/q\nu} Y(\tau(t))^{1/q\nu}} R(t)^{1/\nu} \\
&= \frac{c_l}{\theta^{1/q\nu}} \text{ is a constant.}
\end{aligned} \tag{4.52}$$

By Lemma A.1 with $\mu = 1/\nu \neq 0$, equation (4.52) shows that

$$\ddot{\alpha}_l + \frac{1}{\nu} \dot{\alpha}_l H_R = 0 \tag{4.53}$$

91

for all $l \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. Therefore in total, we have that (4.50) is

$$\sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{(2-d)}{\nu d} H_R \sum_{l \neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l + \sum_{l \neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l^2. \quad (4.54)$$

To form the rest of the left-hand side of (I_i), again use (4.39) to obtain

$$H_l H_k = \frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{1}{\nu d} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k. \quad (4.55)$$

Therefore for any fixed i, we have

$$\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} \left(\frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{1}{\nu d} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k \right). \quad (4.56)$$

As we saw in (4.41), $\sum_{l<k} 1 = \frac{d(d-1)}{2}$ therefore the first term on the right-side of (4.56), which does not depend on the indices l, k, is equal to $\frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2$ times

$$\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} 1 = \sum_{l<k} 1 - \sum_{l \neq i} 1 = \frac{d(d-1)}{2} - (d-1) = \frac{(d-1)(d-2)}{2}. \quad (4.57)$$

As we saw in (4.42), $\sum_{l<k} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) = 0$ therefore the second term on the right-hand side of (4.56) sums to $\frac{1}{\nu d} H_R$ times the quantity

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) &= \sum_{l<k} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) - \sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_i) \\
&= -\sum_{l \neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l - (d-1) \dot{\alpha}_i \\
&= \dot{\alpha}_i - (d-1) \dot{\alpha}_i \\
&= (2-d) \dot{\alpha}_i \quad (4.58)
\end{aligned}$$

where we have used the definitions (4.13) and (4.14) of α_l and the constants c_l to write $\sum_{l \neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l = -\dot{\alpha}_i$. Considering the third term on the right-hand side of (4.56),

we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} \dot\alpha_l \dot\alpha_k &= \sum_{l<k} \dot\alpha_l \dot\alpha_k - c_i \sum_{l\neq i} c_l \\
&= \sum_{l<k} \dot\alpha_l \dot\alpha_k + \left(\sum_{l\neq i} c_l\right)^2 \\
&= \sum_{l<k} \dot\alpha_l \dot\alpha_k + 2\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} c_l c_k + \sum_{l\neq i} c_l^2 \\
&= -\sum_{l<k} \dot\alpha_l \dot\alpha_k - \sum_{l\neq i} c_l^2 \\
&= -\sum_{l<k} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}} - \sum_{l\neq i} c_l^2
\end{aligned}
\tag{4.59}
$$

where again we have used that $\sum_{l\neq i} \dot\alpha_l = -\dot\alpha_i$, and on the last line we recall (4.43). So by (4.57), (4.58) and (4.59), in total (4.56) becomes

$$
\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)(d-2)}{2\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{(2-d)}{\nu d} \dot\alpha_i H_R - \sum_{l<k} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}} - \sum_{l\neq i} c_l^2.
\tag{4.60}
$$

Summing (4.54) and (4.60), the left-hand side of any (I_i) Einstein equation is

$$
\sum_{l\neq i} (\dot H_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot H_R + \frac{d(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 - \sum_{l<k} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}}.
\tag{4.61}
$$

Then by the condition (4.14) on the constants c_l, (4.62) becomes

$$
\sum_{l\neq i} (\dot H_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot H_R + \frac{d(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{D\kappa}{R^{2/\nu}}.
\tag{4.62}
$$

Therefore by (4.48) and (4.62), we obtain (I_i) for all $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. This proves the theorem. $\diamond$

4.1.1 Reduction to classical EMP: pure scalar field

To compute some exact solutions to Einstein's equations for the Bianchi I metric, we take $\rho = p = 0$ and choose parameter $\nu = 1/q$ in Theorem 4.1.1. Therefore

93

solving the Bianchi I Einstein equations

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \overset{(I_0)'}{=} \kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + V \circ \phi\right] + \Lambda \tag{4.63}$$

$$\sum_{l\neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k \overset{(I_i)'}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi\right] + \Lambda$$

for $l, k, i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$ is equivalent to solving the classical EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{-2d\kappa D}{\theta^2(d-1)Y(\tau)^3} \tag{4.64}$$

for constants $\theta, D > 0$. The solutions of $(I_0)', (I_1)', \ldots, (I_d)'$ and (4.64) are related by

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{d\kappa}Q(\tau) \tag{4.65}$$

for $q \neq 0, \phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)), R(t) \overset{def.}{=} (X_1(t)\cdots X_d(t))^{1/q}$ and

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^q = \theta Y(\tau(t)) \tag{4.66}$$

for any $\theta > 0$. Also the quantity

$$D \overset{def.}{=} \frac{1}{2d\kappa}X_1^2 X_2^2 \cdots X_d^2 \left(\sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2\right) \tag{4.67}$$

is constant for

$$\eta_{lk} \overset{def.}{=} H_l - H_k, \ l \neq k, l, \ k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}. \tag{4.68}$$

In the converse direction we have

$$X_l(t) = R(t)^{q/d} e^{\alpha_l(t)} \tag{4.69}$$

for $\alpha_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} c_l\sigma(t)$ where $\sigma(t)$ satisfies

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = 1/\dot{\tau}(t) \tag{4.70}$$

and c_l are any constants for which both

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad \text{and} \qquad \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = -\theta^{2/q\nu} D\kappa. \tag{4.71}$$

Also V is taken to be defined as

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)\theta^2}{2d\kappa}(Y')^2 - \frac{D}{Y^2} - \frac{\theta^2}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t). \qquad (4.72)$$

We now refer to Appendix D for solutions of the classical EMP equation (3.24), which we will map to a solution of the Bianchi I Einstein equations. By comparing (4.66) and (D.5), we note to only consider solutions of (D.5) in Appendix D corresponding to $r_0 = 1$. Also by comparing (4.70) to (D.6), we see to take $s_0 = 1$ in Appendix D. Of course when $D = 0$ in (4.67), $\eta_{lk} = 0$ for all pairs l, k so that $X_1(t), X_2(t), \ldots, X_d(t)$ agree up to a constant multiple. In this case, if we take $R(t) = X_1(t) = \cdots = X_d(t) \overset{def.}{=} a(t)$ and $q = d$ we obtain the FRLW cosmology with curvature $k = 0$ and $n = 2d, D = 0$ so that we may refer to sections 3.1.1 and 3.2.2 for exact solutions to the Bianchi I Einstein equations if $D = 0$. Here we consider solutions to the classical EMP (4.64) by referring to Table 14 with $\lambda_1 = \frac{-2d\kappa D}{\theta^2(d-1)} < 0$.

Example 32 *For $\theta = 1$ and choice of constant $D = (d-1)/2d\kappa$, we consider solution 5 in Table 14 with $d_0 = b_0 = 0$ and $c_0 = 1$. That is, we have solution $Y(\tau) = (a_0 + 2\tau)^{1/2}$ to the classical EMP $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -1/Y(\tau)^3$ for $Q(\tau) = 0$ and $a_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. By (D.27) - (D.29) we have $\tau(t) = \frac{1}{2}\left((t - t_0)^2 - a_0\right)$ and*

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} = (t - t_0)^{1/q} \qquad (4.73)$$

for any $q \neq 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Also by (D.32) we have $\sigma(t) = \ln(t - t_0)$ so that

$$\begin{aligned} X_i(t) &= R(t)^{q/d} e^{c_i \sigma(t)} \\ &= (t - t_0)^{1/d} e^{c_i \ln(t - t_0)} \\ &= (t - t_0)^{1/d + c_i} \end{aligned} \qquad (4.74)$$

for $1 \leq i \leq d$ and for constants $c_1, \ldots, c_d$ that satisfy

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad and \qquad \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = -\frac{(d-1)}{2d} \qquad (4.75)$$

by (4.14). Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$ the scalar field $\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ is constant. Finally, by (4.72), (D.30) and (D.29), we obtain constant potential $V(\phi(t)) = -\Lambda/\kappa$.

One can verify by hand that $X_1(t), \ldots, X_d(t), \phi(t)$ and $V(\phi(t))$ in (4.74), (32) and (6.79) satisfy the vacuum Bianchi I equations $(I_0)'$ and $(I_i)'$ for $1 \leq i \leq d$ and for c_i as in (4.75), with use of the identity in equation (4.59). This example is the well-known Kasner solution $ds^2 = -dt^2 + \sum_{i=1}^{d} t^{2p_i} dx_i^2$, in which the constants p_i must satisfy the Kasner conditions $\sum_{i=1}^{d} p_i = \sum_{i=1}^{d} p_i^2 = 1$. By setting $p_i = 1/d + c_i$, we see that our conditions (4.75) are equivalent to the Kasner conditions since $\sum_{i=1}^{d} p_i = \sum_{i=1}^{d} (1/d + c_i) = 1 + \sum_{i=1}^{d} c_i = 1 + 0 = 1$ and $\sum_{i=1}^{d} p_i^2 = \sum_{i=1}^{d} (1/d + c_i)^2 = (1/d) + \sum_{i=1}^{d} c_i^2 = (1/d) - 2 \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = (1/d) + 2((d-1)/2d) = 1$.

Example 33 *For $\theta = q = 1$ and choice of constant $D = (d-1)/2d\kappa$, we consider solution 5 in Table 14 with $d_0 = a_0 = 0$, $b_0 = 4$ and $c_0 = 1$. That is, we have solution $Y(\tau) = (4\tau(t)^2 + 2\tau(t))^{1/2}$ to the classical EMP $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -1/Y(\tau)^3$ for $Q(\tau) = 0$. By (D.33) - (D.35) we have $\tau(t) = \frac{1}{8}\left(e^{2(t-t_0)} + e^{-2(t-t_0)} - 8\right)$ and*

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = \frac{1}{2}\sinh(2(t-t_0)) \qquad (4.76)$$

for any $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Also by (D.37) we have that

$$\sigma(t) = -2Arccoth\left(e^{2(t-t_0)}\right) = \ln\left(tanh(t-t_0)\right) \qquad (4.77)$$

so that

$$\begin{aligned} X_i(t) &= R(t)^{1/d} e^{c_i \sigma(t)} = \frac{1}{2^{1/d}} \sinh(2(t-t_0))^{1/d} e^{c_i \sigma(t)} \\ &= \frac{1}{2^{1/d}} \sinh(2(t-t_0))^{1/d} tanh^{c_i}(t-t_0) \end{aligned} \qquad (4.78)$$

96

for $\sigma(t)$ as in (4.77) and constants that satisfy

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad and \qquad \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = -\frac{(d-1)}{2d}. \qquad (4.79)$$

Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$, the scalar field is constant $\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (4.72), (D.36) and (D.35), we obtain constant potential $V(\phi(t)) = \frac{2(d-1)}{d\kappa} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}$. One can compare this solution with the higher-dimensional solution of Lorenz-Petzold in [24].

As an example for $d = 3$, one can take $c_1 = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}, c_2 = 0$ and $c_3 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$ so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
X_1(t) &= \frac{1}{\sqrt[3]{2}} \sinh(2(t-t_0))^{1/3} tanh^{-1/\sqrt{3}}(t-t_0) \\
X_2(t) &= \frac{1}{\sqrt[3]{2}} \sinh(2(t-t_0))^{1/3} \\
X_3(t) &= \frac{1}{\sqrt[3]{2}} \sinh(2(t-t_0))^{1/3} tanh^{1/\sqrt{3}}(t-t_0) \qquad (4.80)
\end{aligned}
$$

and potential $V(\phi(t)) = \frac{4}{3\kappa} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}$ solve the Bianchi I equations in $3+1$ spacetime dimensions. One can compare this solution to the Bali and Jain solution in [1].

4.2   In terms of a Schrödinger-Type Equation

To reformulate the Einstein field equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ in terms of a Schrödinger-type equation with one less non-linear term than the generalized EMP, one can apply Corollary 2.3.1 to the difference $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$. Below is the resulting statement.

Theorem 4.2.1 *Suppose   you   are   given   twice   differentiable   functions $X_1(t), \ldots, X_d(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ which   satisfy   the   Einstein   equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ for   some*

97

$\Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0,1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$. *Let $g(\sigma)$ denote the inverse of a function $\sigma(t)$ which satisfies*

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta \left(X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t) \right)} \tag{4.81}$$

for some $\theta > 0$. Then the following functions

$$u(\sigma) = \left[\frac{1}{X_1 \cdots X_d} \right] \circ g(\sigma) \tag{4.82}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{d\kappa}{(d-1)} \psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{4.83}$$

solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E - P(\sigma)] u(\sigma) = \frac{\theta^2 d\kappa(\rho(\sigma) + \mathrm{p}(\sigma))}{(d-1)u(\sigma)} \tag{4.84}$$

for

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(g(\sigma)) \tag{4.85}$$

$$\rho(\sigma) = \rho(g(\sigma)), \ \mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(g(\sigma)) \tag{4.86}$$

and where

$$E \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{-\theta^2}{(d-1)} X_1^2 X_2^2 \cdots X_d^2 \sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 \tag{4.87}$$

is a constant for

$$\eta_{lk} \stackrel{def.}{=} H_l - H_k, l \neq k, l, k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}. \tag{4.88}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$, and also functions $P(\sigma)$ and $\rho(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$ which solve (4.84) for some constants $E < 0, \theta > 0, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ and $d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0,1\}$. In order to construct functions which solve $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$, first find $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma)$ which solve the differential equations

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta} u(\sigma(t)) \qquad and \qquad \psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{d\kappa} P(\sigma). \tag{4.89}$$

Let

$$R(t) = u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu} \qquad and \qquad \alpha_l(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} c_l \sigma(t), l \in \{1, \ldots, d\} \tag{4.90}$$

where c_l are any constants for which both

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad and \qquad \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = \frac{(d-1)E}{2d}. \tag{4.91}$$

Then the functions

$$X_l(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)} \tag{4.92}$$

$$\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t)) \tag{4.93}$$

$$\rho(t) = \rho(\sigma(t)), \ p(t) = p(\sigma(t)) \tag{4.94}$$

and

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2\theta^2 d\kappa} \left((u')^2 + Eu^2 \right) - \frac{1}{2\theta^2} u^2 (\psi')^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \sigma(t) \tag{4.95}$$

satisfy the equations $(I_0), \dots, (I_d)$.

Proof. This proof will implement Corollary 2.3.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 5. Corollary 2.3.1 applied to Bianchi I

In Corollary	substitute	In Corollary	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	ε	$\nu d\kappa/(d-1)$
$G(t)$	constant $\nu E/\theta^2$	A	$2/\nu$
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t) + p(t))$	A_1	0
$F_1(\sigma)$	$\frac{\theta^2 d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(\sigma) + p(\sigma))$	C_1	1

Much of this proof will rely on computations that are exactly the same as those seen in the proof of Theorem 4.1.1 (the generalized EMP formulation of Bianchi I). Therefore we will restate the relevant results here, but point the reader to the details in the proof of Theorem 4.1.1.

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$. Forming the linear combination $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ of Einstein's equations and simplifying, as was done in (4.19) - (4.29),

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu}{(d-1)} \sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p) \right] \qquad (4.96)$$

where

$$H_R(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)} \qquad (4.97)$$

and

$$R(t) \overset{def.}{=} (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))^\nu \qquad (4.98)$$

for any $\nu \neq 0$. Next we will confirm that E is constant. As was done in (4.30)-(4.33), since the right-hand sides of Einstein's equations (I_i) are the same for all $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$, by equating the left-hand sides of any two equations (I_i) and (I_j) for $i \neq j$, and after some rearranging we obtain

$$\dot{\eta}_{ij} + \frac{1}{\nu} \eta_{ij} H_R = 0 \qquad (4.99)$$

for η_{ij} defined in (4.88). Therefore the definition (4.87) of E is constant, being proportional to a sum of squares of these constant functions. By the definitions (4.87) and (4.98) of the constant E and the function $R(t)$, we now rewrite (4.96) from above as

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p) \right] + \frac{\nu E}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \qquad (4.100)$$

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with constants $\varepsilon, N, A, A_1 \ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 9. Since $\sigma(t), u(\sigma), P(\sigma)$ and $\psi(\sigma)$ defined in (4.81), (4.82), (4.83) and (4.85) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with constants and functions according to Table 9, by this corollary

100

and by definition (4.86) of $\rho_i(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$, the Schrödinger-type equation (2.110) holds for constants $C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 9. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation (4.84) and we begin by showing that (I_0) is satisfied. Differentiating the definition of $R(t)$ in (4.90) and using the definition in (4.89) of $\sigma(t)$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{R}(t) &= -\nu u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu-1} u'(\sigma(t)) \dot{\sigma}(t) \\
&= -\frac{\nu}{\theta} u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu} u'(\sigma(t)).
\end{aligned} \tag{4.101}
$$

so that

$$
H_R \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R} = -\frac{\nu}{\theta} u'(\sigma(t)). \tag{4.102}
$$

Differentiating the definition (4.93) of $\phi(t)$ and using the definition in (4.90) of $\sigma(t)$, we obtain

$$
\dot{\phi}(t) = \psi'(\sigma(t)) \dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta} \psi'(\sigma(t)) u(\sigma(t)). \tag{4.103}
$$

Using (4.102) and (4.103), and also the definitions (4.90) and (4.94) of $R(t)$ and $\rho(t)$ respectively, the definition (4.95) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$
V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}} \right) - \frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{4.104}
$$

The quantity in parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, first note that the definitions $X_l(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)}$ in (4.92) and $H(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)}$ in (4.102), and the condition $\sum_l c_l = 0$, are the same as those in Theorem 4.1.1. Also by the definitions (4.90), (4.89) and (4.90) of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t)$ and $R(t)$, we obtain

$$
\dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k = c_l c_k \dot{\sigma}^2 = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2} (u \circ \sigma)^2 = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R(t)^{2/\nu}}, \tag{4.105}
$$

which is a slightly modified version of (4.43) from our computation in the proof of Theorem 4.1.1. Therefore by the arguments in (4.40)-(4.44), and using (4.105) to slightly modify the last term to apply here, we have that

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \sum_{l<k} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{4.106}$$

Then by the condition (4.91) on the constants c_l, (4.106) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{4.107}$$

That is, the expression (4.104) for V can now be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa} \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}, \tag{4.108}$$

showing that (I_0) holds under the assumptions of the converse implication.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Corollary 2.3.1 holds, applied with constants $N, C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 9. Since $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (4.89), (4.90) and (4.93) are consistent with the converse implication of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with $a(t)$ and ε as in Table 9, by this corollary and by the definition (4.94) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.109) holds for constants $\varepsilon, A, A_1, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 9. That is, we have regained (4.100). Now solving (4.104) for $\rho(t)$ and substituting this into (4.100), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2 \kappa R^{2/\nu}} + p + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d\kappa} H_R^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right]. \tag{4.109}$$

Multiplying by $\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}$ and rearranging, we see that

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}} = -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda. \tag{4.110}$$

102

The left-hand side of this equation is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of (I_i) for any $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. To see this, again we use that the definitions $X_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)}$ in (4.92) and $H_R(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)}$ in (4.102), and the condition $\sum_l c_l = 0$, are the same as those in Theorem 4.1.1. Also by the definitions (4.90) and (4.89) of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t)$ and $R(t)$, we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{\alpha}_l(t) R(t)^{1/\nu} &= c_l \dot{\sigma}(t) R(t)^{1/\nu} \\
&= \frac{c_l}{\theta} u(\sigma(t)) R(t)^{1/\nu} \\
&= \frac{c_l}{\theta} \text{ is a constant} \qquad (4.111)
\end{aligned}
$$

which shows that

$$
\ddot{\alpha}_l + \frac{1}{\nu} \dot{\alpha}_l H_R = 0 \qquad (4.112)
$$

holds here as it does in Theorem 4.1.1. Therefore by the arguments in (4.49)-(4.61), and as above using (4.105) to slightly modify the last term of (4.61) to apply here, we have that

$$
\sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l, k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{d(d-1)}{2 \nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 - \sum_{l < k} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \qquad (4.113)
$$

Then by the condition (4.91) on the constants c_l, (4.113) becomes

$$
\sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l, k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \frac{1}{\nu d}(d-1) \dot{H}_R + \frac{d(d-1)}{2 \nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 - \sum_{l < k} \frac{(d-1)E}{2 d \theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \qquad (4.114)
$$

Combining (4.110) and (4.114), we obtain (I_i) for all $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. This proves the theorem.

$\diamond$

4.2.1 Reduction to linear Schrödinger: pure scalar field

To show some examples we take $\rho = p = 0$ so that Theorem shows that solving the Bianchi I Einstein equations

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \overset{(I_0)''}{=} \kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot\phi^2 + V \circ \phi \right] + \Lambda \tag{4.115}$$

$$\sum_{l\neq i}(\dot H_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k \overset{(I_i)''}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot\phi^2 - V \circ \phi \right] + \Lambda$$

is equivalent to solving the linear Schrödinger equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E - P(\sigma)]\, u(\sigma) = 0. \tag{4.116}$$

The solutions of $(I_0)''$, $(I_i)''$ in (4.115) and the solutions of (4.116) are related by

$$R(t) = (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))^\nu = u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu} \text{ and } \psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{d\kappa} P(\sigma) \tag{4.117}$$

for any $\nu \neq 0$ and where $\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t))$ and

$$\dot\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{\theta X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t)} = \frac{1}{\theta} u(\sigma(t)), \tag{4.118}$$

for $\theta > 0$. Also the constant E is

$$E \overset{def.}{=} \frac{-\theta^2}{(d-1)} X_1^2 X_2^2 \cdots X_d^2 \left(\sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 \right) \tag{4.119}$$

for $\eta_{lk} \overset{def.}{=} H_l - H_k$, $l,\ k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. In the converse direction

$$X_l(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)} \tag{4.120}$$

for $\alpha_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} c_l \sigma(t)$ and where the constants c_l satisfy

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad \text{and} \qquad \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = \frac{(d-1)E}{2d}. \tag{4.121}$$

Also V is taken to be such that

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2\theta^2 d\kappa} \left((u')^2 + Eu^2 \right) - \frac{1}{2\theta^2} u^2 (\psi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \sigma(t). \tag{4.122}$$

We now refer to Appendix E for solutions of the linear Schrödinger equation (4.116). We will map them using the theorem to exact solutions of Einstein's equations. Of course when $E = 0$ in (4.119), $\eta_{lk} = 0$ for all pairs l, k so that $X_1(t), X_2(t), \ldots, X_d(t)$ agree up to a constant multiple. In this case, if we take $R(t) = X_1(t) = \cdots = X_d(t) \overset{def.}{=} a(t)$ and $\nu = 1/d$ we obtain the FRLW cosmology with curvature $k = 0, n = 2d$ and $D = 0$ so that we may refer to section 3.3.1 for exact solutions to the Bianchi I Einstein equations if $E = 0$. Here we consider solutions to the linear Schrödinger equation (4.116) by referring to Table 15 with $E < 0$.

Example 34 *For $\theta = 1$ and choice of constant $E = -1$, we take solution 4 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$, $a_0 = 1$ and $b_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = e^{-\sigma}$, $P(\sigma) = 0$. By (E.28) - (E.30) with $r_0 = 1$ we obtain $\sigma(t) = \ln((t - t_0))$ and*

$$R(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^\nu} = (t - t_0)^\nu \tag{4.123}$$

for any $\nu \neq 0$ $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ so that

$$X_i(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{c_i \sigma(t)} = (t - t_0)^{1/d + c_i} \tag{4.124}$$

for constants that satisfy

$$\sum_{l=0}^{d} c_l = 0 \text{ and } \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = -\frac{(d-1)}{2d}. \tag{4.125}$$

Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, $\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0$ for constant $\psi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (4.122), (E.31) and (E.30), we obtain constant potential $V(\phi(t)) = -\Lambda/\kappa$. This is alternate derivation of the Kasner vacuum solution seen above in Example 32.

For $\nu = 1/2$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u and u' both perturbed by .01. The graphs of $R(t)$ below show that this solution is unstable, since the absolute error grows up to two orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 26. Instability of Bianchi I Example 34
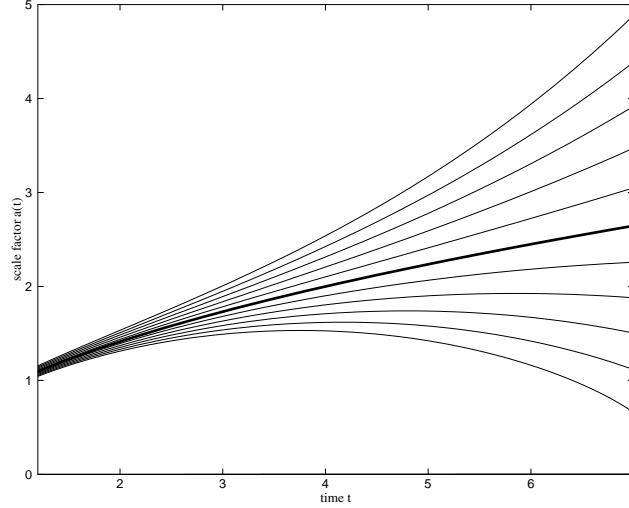
Example 35 *For $\theta = 1$ and choice of constant $E = -1$, we take solution 4 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$ and $a_0, b_0 > 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = a_0 e^{-\sigma} - b_0 e^{\sigma}$ and $P(\sigma) = 0$. By (E.32) - (E.34) we obtain $\sigma(t) = \ln\left(\sqrt{\frac{a_0}{b_0}}\tanh(\sqrt{a_0 b_0}(t - t_0))\right)$ and*

$$R(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^\nu} = \frac{1}{(2\sqrt{a_0 b_0})^\nu} \; \sinh^\nu(2\sqrt{a_0 b_0}(t - t_0)) \qquad (4.126)$$

for $\nu \neq 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
X_i(t) &= R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{c_i \sigma(t)} \qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\quad (4.127) \\
&= \frac{\sqrt{a_0}^{\,c_i - 1/d}}{\sqrt{b_0}^{\,c_i + 1/d}} \; \sinh^{1/d + c_i}(\sqrt{a_0 b_0}(t - t_0)) \cosh^{1/d - c_i}(\sqrt{a_0 b_0}(t - t_0)).
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, the scalar field is constant

$$\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0 \in \mathbb{R}. \qquad (4.128)$$

Finally, by (4.122), (E.35) and (E.34), we obtain constant potential

$$V(\phi(t)) = \frac{2(d-1)a_0 b_0}{d\kappa} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{4.129}$$

since $coth^2(x) - csch^2(x) = 1$.

As an example for $d = 3$, *one can take* $c_1 = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$, $c_2 = 0$, $c_3 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$ *and* $a_0 = b_0 = 1$ *so that*

$$X_1(t) = sinh^{(1-\sqrt{3})/3}((t-t_0))cosh^{(1+\sqrt{3})/3}((t-t_0))$$

$$X_2(t) = sinh^{1/3}((t-t_0))cosh^{1/3}((t-t_0))$$

$$X_3(t) = sinh^{(1+\sqrt{3})/3}((t-t_0))cosh^{(1-\sqrt{3})/3}((t-t_0)) \tag{4.130}$$

and the potential $V(\phi(t)) = \frac{4}{3\kappa} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}$ *solve the Bianchi I equations in* $3+1$ *spacetime dimensions. One can also compare this solution with the Bali and Jain solution in section 2 of [1].*

Example 36 *For* $\theta = 1$ *and choice of constant* $E = -1$, *we take solution 5 in Table 15 with* $c_0 = -1$ *and* $b_0 = 0$ *so that we have* $u(\sigma) = (a_0/\sigma)e^{-\sigma^2/2}$ *and* $P(\sigma) = \sigma^2 + 2/\sigma^2$ *for* $a_0 > 0$. *By (E.36) - (E.38) we obtain* $\sigma(t) = \sqrt{2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}$ *and*

$$R(t) = \frac{1}{u(\sigma(t))^\nu} = \left(\sqrt{2}(t-t_0)\sqrt{\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}\right)^\nu \tag{4.131}$$

for $t > t_0$ *so that*

$$X_i(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d}e^{c_i\sigma(t)}$$

$$= \left(\sqrt{2}(t-t_0)\sqrt{\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}\right)^{1/d} e^{c_i\sqrt{2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}}. \tag{4.132}$$

for constants c_i *that satisfy*

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \text{ and } \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = -\frac{(d-1)}{2d}. \tag{4.133}$$

By (E.41) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/d\kappa$, we have scalar field

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= \psi(\sigma(t)) \\
&= \sqrt{\frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa}} \left(\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1} + \ln\left[2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))\right] \right. \\
&\quad \left. - \ln\left[4 + 4\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1}\right] \right) + \beta_0
\end{aligned}
\tag{4.134}
$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (4.122), (E.39) and (E.38), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa}\left((u')^2 - u^2\right) - \frac{1}{2\theta^2}u^2(\psi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \sigma(t) \\
&= \frac{(d-1)(2\ln(a_0(t-t_0)) - 1)}{8d\kappa(t-t_0)^2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0))} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{4.135}
$$

For example when $d = 3$, we can take $c_1 = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$, $c_2 = 0$ and $c_3 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$ to obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
X_1(t) &= \left(\sqrt{2}(t-t_0)\sqrt{\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}\right)^{1/3} e^{-\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\sqrt{2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}} \\
X_2(t) &= \left(\sqrt{2}(t-t_0)\sqrt{\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}\right)^{1/3} \\
X_3(t) &= \left(\sqrt{2}(t-t_0)\sqrt{\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}\right)^{1/3} e^{\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\sqrt{2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))}},
\end{aligned}
\tag{4.136}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= \sqrt{\frac{1}{3\kappa}} \left(\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1} + \ln\left[2\ln(a_0(t-t_0))\right] \right. \\
&\quad \left. - \ln\left[4 + 4\sqrt{2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0)) + 1}\right] \right) + \beta_0
\end{aligned}
\tag{4.137}
$$

and

$$
V(\phi(t)) = \frac{(2\ln(a_0(t-t_0)) - 1)}{12\kappa(t-t_0)^2\ln^2(a_0(t-t_0))} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\tag{4.138}
$$

for $\beta_0, t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $a_0 > 0$. Note that this is similar to the FRLW solution found in Example 21 by setting $n = 2d$ and by identifying $a(t)$ in Example 21 with $R(t)$ here.

For $\nu = a_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u and u' both perturbed by .01. The graphs of $R(t)$ below show that this solution is unstable, since the absolute error grows three orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 27. Instability of Bianchi I Example 36
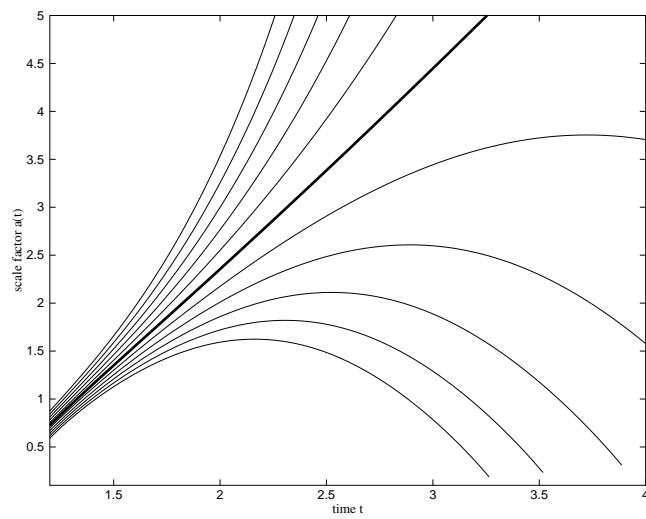
C H A P T E R   5

REFORMULATIONS OF A CONFORMAL BIANCHI I

MODEL

For a change of coordinates in comparison to chapter 4, we consider a Bianchi I metric of the form

$$ds^2 = -\left(a_1(t)a_2(t)\cdots a_d(t)\right)^2 dt^2 + a_1(t)^2 dx_1^2 + a_2^2(t)dx_2^2 + \cdots + a_d^2(t)dx_d^2 \quad (5.1)$$

in a $d + 1-$dimensional spacetime. The nonzero Einstein equations $g^{ij}G_{ij} = -\kappa g^{ij}T_{ij} + \Lambda$, multiplied by $|g_{00}| = (a_1 a_2 \cdots a_d)^2$ are

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \overset{(I_0)}{=} \kappa \left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_1 a_2 \cdots a_d)^2 \left(V \circ \phi + \rho + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right] \quad (5.2)$$

$$\sum_{l\neq 1} \dot{H}_l - \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \overset{(I_1)}{=} \kappa \left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_1 a_2 \cdots a_d)^2 \left(V \circ \phi - p + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right]$$

$$\vdots$$

$$\sum_{l\neq i} \dot{H}_l - \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \overset{(I_i)}{=} \kappa \left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_1 a_2 \cdots a_d)^2 \left(V \circ \phi - p + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right]$$

$$\vdots$$

$$\sum_{l\neq d} \dot{H}_l - \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \overset{(I_d)}{=} \kappa \left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_1 a_2 \cdots a_d)^2 \left(V \circ \phi - p + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right]$$

where $H_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}_l}{a_l}$.

5.1 In terms of a Generalized EMP

Theorem 5.1.1 *Suppose you are given twice differentiable functions $a_1(t), \ldots, a_d(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$ and also functions $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ for some $\Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N} \backslash \{0, 1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R} \backslash \{0\}$. Denote*

$$R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (a_1(t)a_2(t) \cdots a_d(t))^{\nu} \tag{5.3}$$

for some $\nu \neq 0$. If $f(\tau)$ is the inverse of a function $\tau(t)$ which satisfies

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^{q + \frac{1}{\nu}}, \tag{5.4}$$

for some constants $\theta > 0$ and $q \neq 0$, then

$$Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q \qquad and \qquad Q(\tau) = \frac{q\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\varphi'(\tau)^2 \tag{5.5}$$

solve the generalized EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{q\nu L}{\theta^2 Y(\tau)^{(q\nu+2)/q\nu}} - \frac{q\nu d\kappa \left(\varrho(\tau) + \mathrm{p}(\tau)\right)}{\theta^2(d-1)Y(\tau)} \tag{5.6}$$

for

$$\varphi(\tau) = \phi(f(\tau)) \tag{5.7}$$

$$\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau)), \ \mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau)). \tag{5.8}$$

$$L \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-1)} \sum_{1 < l < k \leq d} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j^2, \tag{5.9}$$

where $\mu_i \in \mathbb{R}$ are such that $a_i(t) = \omega_i e^{\mu_i t} a_1(t)$ for some $\omega_i \in \mathbb{R}, i \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$.

Conversely, suppose you given a twice differentiable function $Y(\tau) > 0$, a continuous function $Q(\tau)$ and also functions $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$ which solve (5.6) for some constants $\theta > 0$ and $q, \nu, \kappa \in \mathbb{R} \backslash \{0\}, L \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N} \backslash \{0, 1\}$. In order to construct

functions which solve $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$, first find $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau)$ which solve the differential

equations

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t))^{(q\nu+1)/q\nu} \qquad and \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{q\nu d\kappa} Q(\tau). \tag{5.10}$$

Next find constants $\mu_i, i \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$ which satisfy

$$L = \frac{2}{(d-1)} \sum_{2 \le l < k \le d} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j^2, \tag{5.11}$$

and let

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q}. \tag{5.12}$$

Then the functions

$$a_1(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d}(\omega_2 \cdots \omega_d e^{(\mu_2 + \cdots + \mu_d)t})^{-1/d} \tag{5.13}$$

$$a_i(t) = \omega_i e^{\mu_i t} a_1(t) \tag{5.14}$$

$$\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)) \tag{5.15}$$

$$\rho(t) = \varrho(\tau(t)), \qquad p(t) = \mathrm{p}(\tau(t)) \tag{5.16}$$

and

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa} \left(\frac{\theta^2}{\nu^2 q^2}(Y')^2 + \frac{L}{Y^{2/q\nu}} \right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2}(\varphi')^2 Y^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} - \varrho \right] \circ \tau(t) \tag{5.17}$$

satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ for any $\omega_i > 0, 2 \le i \le d$.

Proof. This proof will implement Theorem 2.1.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 6.   Theorem 2.1.1 applied to conformal Bianchi I

In Theorem	substitute	In Theorem	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	N	1
δ	$-1/\nu$	ε	$\nu d\kappa/(d-1)$
$G_0(t)$	constant νL	A_0	0
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t)+p(t))$	A_1	$-2/\nu$
$\lambda_0(\tau)$	constant $q\nu L/\theta^2$	B_0	$(2+q\nu)/q\nu$
$\lambda_1(\tau)$	$\frac{-q\nu d\kappa}{\theta^2(d-1)}(\varrho(\tau)+\mathrm{p}(\tau))$	B_1	1

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0),\dots,(I_d)$. Since the right-hand sides of Einstein equations (I_i) are the same for all $i \in \{1,\dots,d\}$, we begin by equating the left-hand side of (I_1) with the left-hand side of any (I_j) for $j \in \{2,\dots,d\}$ since it will give us a simplifying relation among the scale factors $a_1(t),\dots,a_d(t)$. Doing this, we obtain

$$\sum_{l\neq 1}\dot{H}_l - \sum_{l<k}H_lH_k = \sum_{l\neq j}\dot{H}_l - \sum_{l<k}H_lH_k. \tag{5.18}$$

All terms cancel except for the jth term from the first sum on the left-hand side, and also the 1st term from the first sum on the right-hand side. This leaves

$$\dot{H}_j = \dot{H}_1, \tag{5.19}$$

which holds for all $j \in \{1,\dots,d\}$. Integrating, we obtain

$$H_j = H_1 + \mu_j \tag{5.20}$$

for $\mu_j \in \mathbb{R}, j \in \{1,\dots,d\}$ $(\mu_1 = 0)$. Since in general $\frac{d}{dt}\ln(a_i) = \frac{\dot{a}_i}{a_i} = H_i$, (5.20) can be written

$$\frac{d}{dt}\ln(a_j) = \frac{d}{dt}\ln(a_1) + \mu_j. \tag{5.21}$$

Integrating again we get

$$\ln(a_j) = \ln(a_1) + \mu_j t + c'_j \tag{5.22}$$

for some $c_j \in \mathbb{R}, j \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$ ($c_1 = 0$). Exponentiating and letting $\omega_j \overset{def.}{=} e^{c_j} > 0$, we have that

$$a_j(t) = \omega_j e^{\mu_j t} a_1(t), \tag{5.23}$$

where of course this holds trivially for $j = 1$ where $\omega_1 = 1$ and $\mu_1 = 0$. By (5.20), the left-hand side of (I_0) can be written as

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \sum_{l<k} (H_1 + \mu_l)(H_1 + \mu_k) = \sum_{l<k} (H_1^2 + (\mu_l + \mu_k)H_1 + \mu_l \mu_k). \tag{5.24}$$

The first term on the right-hand side of (5.24) does not depend on the indices l, k. By using our computation in (4.41), this term is equal to H_1^2 times $\sum_{l<k} 1 = \frac{d(d-1)}{2}$. The second term on the right-hand side of (5.24) sums to H_1 times the quantity

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l<k} (\mu_l + \mu_k) &= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1} \sum_{k=l+1}^{d} \mu_l + \sum_{k=2}^{d} \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} \mu_k \\
&= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1} (d-l)\mu_l + \sum_{k=2}^{d} (k-1)\mu_k \\
&= (d-1)\mu_1 + \sum_{j=2}^{d-1} (d-j+j-1)\mu_j + (d-1)\mu_d \\
&= (d-1) \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j. \tag{5.25}
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore (5.24) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{d(d-1)}{2} H_1^2 + (d-1)H_1 \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j + \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k. \tag{5.26}$$

114

Next using the definition (5.3) of $R(t)$, we further define

$$H_R \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R}$$

$$= \frac{\nu(a_1 \cdots a_d(t))^{\nu-1}(\dot{a}_1 \cdots a_d + \cdots + a_1 \cdots \dot{a}_d)}{(a_1 \cdots a_d)^\nu}$$

$$= \nu \sum_{j=1}^{d} H_j$$

$$= \nu \sum_{j=1}^{d} (H_1 + \mu_j)$$

$$= \nu \left(dH_1 + \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j \right) \tag{5.27}$$

by (5.20). Therefore

$$H_1 = \frac{1}{\nu d} H_R - \frac{1}{d} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j \tag{5.28}$$

and

$$\dot{H}_1 = \frac{1}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R \tag{5.29}$$

so that (5.26) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \tag{5.30}$$

$$\frac{d(d-1)}{2} \left(\frac{1}{\nu d} H_R - \frac{1}{d} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j \right)^2 + (d-1) \left(\frac{1}{\nu d} H_R - \frac{1}{d} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j \right) \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j + \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k.$$

Collecting terms (the H_R terms sums to zero), we obtain

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)}{2d} \left(\sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j \right)^2 + \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k. \tag{5.31}$$

Also using that

$$\left(\sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j \right)^2 = 2 \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k + \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j^2 \tag{5.32}$$

the equation (5.31) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{1}{d} \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k - \frac{(d-1)}{2d} \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j^2. \tag{5.33}$$

115

Defining the quantity

$$L \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-1)} \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j^2$$

$$= \frac{2}{(d-1)} \sum_{2 \le l < k \le d} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j^2 \quad (\text{since } \mu_1 = 0), \tag{5.34}$$

we see that (5.33) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)}{2d} L. \tag{5.35}$$

Similarly by (5.19), (5.29) and (5.35), the left-hand side of (I_i) for $1 \le i \le d$ can be written as

$$\sum_{l \ne i} \dot{H}_l - \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R - \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)}{2d} L. \tag{5.36}$$

That is, by (5.33), (5.36) and the definition (5.3) of $R(t)$, equations (I_0) and (I_i) for $1 \le i \le d$ can be written as

$$\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)}{2d} L \stackrel{(I_0)'}{=} \kappa \left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + R^{2/\nu} \left(V \circ \phi + \rho + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right]$$

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R - \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)}{2d} L \stackrel{(I_i)'}{=} \kappa \left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + R^{2/\nu} \left(V \circ \phi - p + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right].$$

Forming the linear combination $(I_0)' - (I_i)'$, and multiplying by $\frac{-\nu d}{(d-1)}$,

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{1}{\nu} H_R^2 - \nu L = \frac{-\nu d \kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + R^{2/\nu}(\rho + p) \right]. \tag{5.37}$$

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Theorem 2.1.1, applied with constants $\epsilon, \varepsilon, N, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 6. Since $\tau(t), Y(\tau), Q(\tau)$ and $\varphi(\tau)$ defined in (5.4), (5.5) and (5.7) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Theorem 2.1.1, by this theorem and by definition (5.8) of $\varrho(\tau), p(\tau)$, the generalized EMP equation (2.2) holds for

constants $B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 6. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the generalized EMP equation (5.6) and we begin by showing that (I_0) is satisfied. Differentiating the definition of $R(t)$ in (5.12) and using the definition in (5.10) of $\tau(t)$, we see that

$$\dot{R}(t) = \frac{1}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{\frac{1}{q}-1} Y'(\tau(t)) \dot{\tau}(t) \tag{5.38}$$

$$= \frac{\theta}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{\frac{1}{q}(1+\frac{1}{\nu})} Y'(\tau(t)) \tag{5.39}$$

Dividing by $R(t)$, we obtain

$$H_R(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)} = \frac{\theta}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{1/q\nu} Y'(\tau(t)). \tag{5.40}$$

Differentiating the definition (5.15) of $\phi(t)$ and using definition (5.10) of $\tau(t)$ gives

$$\dot{\phi}(t) = \varphi'(\tau(t)) \dot{\tau}(t) = \theta \varphi'(\tau(t)) Y(\tau(t))^{(q\nu+1)/q\nu}. \tag{5.41}$$

Using (5.40) and (5.41), and also the definitions (5.12) and (5.16) of $R(t)$ and $\rho_i(t)$ respectively, the definition (5.17) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{R^{2/\nu}} \left[\frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)}{2d} L \right) - \frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} \right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} - \rho. \tag{5.42}$$

The quantity in the inner parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, we differentiate the definitions in (5.13) and (5.14) of $a_i(t)$, divide the results by $a_i(t)$, and use the definition (5.40) of H_R to obtain

$$H_1 \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}_1}{a_1} = \frac{1}{\nu d} H_R - \frac{1}{d}(\mu_2 + \cdots + \mu_d) \tag{5.43}$$

and

$$H_i \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}_i}{a_i} = \frac{\dot{a}_1}{a_1} + \mu_i = H_1 + \mu_i \tag{5.44}$$

117

for $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$ by taking $\mu_1 \overset{def.}{=} 0$. This confirms that the identities (5.19), (5.20), (5.28) and (5.29) hold in the converse direction, so that the computations (5.26)-(5.35) are also valid in the converse direction for L in (5.11). That is,

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)}{2d} L \tag{5.45}$$

which shows that (5.42) can be written

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{R^{2/\nu}} \left[\frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \right) - \frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} \right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} - \rho \tag{5.46}$$

so that (I_0) holds.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Theorem 2.1.1 holds, applied with constants $N, B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 6. Since $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (5.10), (5.12) and (5.15) are consistent with the converse implication of Theorem 2.1.1, applied with $a(t), \delta$ and ε as in Table 6, by this theorem and by the definition (5.16) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.1) holds for constants $\delta, \varepsilon, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 6. That is, we have regained equation (5.37). Now solving (5.42) for $R^{2/\nu} \rho(t)$ and substituting this into (5.37), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{1}{2\nu} H_R^2 - \frac{\nu}{2} L = \frac{-\nu d \kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + R^{2/\nu} \left(-V \circ \phi + p - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right]. \tag{5.47}$$

Multiplying by $\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}$ and rearranging, we get that

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R - \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)}{2d} L = -\kappa \left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + R^{2/\nu} \left(-V \circ \phi + p - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right]. \tag{5.48}$$

As noted above, the computations (5.26)-(5.35) still hold in the converse direction so that by (5.36), we see that the left-hand side of (5.48) is in fact equal to the left-hand side of (I_i) for any $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. Since $R = (a_1 \cdots a_d)^\nu$, the right-hand

118

side of (5.48) agrees with the right-hand side of (I_i) for all $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. This proves the theorem. $\diamond$

5.1.1 Reduction to classical EMP: pure scalar field

To show some examples we take $\rho = p = 0$ and choose parameter $\nu = 1/q$ in Theorem 5.1.1 to find that solving the Bianchi I Einstein equations

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \overset{(I_0)'}{=} \kappa \left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_1 a_2 \cdots a_d)^2 \left(V \circ \phi + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right] \tag{5.49}$$

$$\sum_{l\neq i} \dot{H}_l - \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \overset{(I_i)'}{=} \kappa \left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_1 a_2 \cdots a_d)^2 \left(V \circ \phi + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right]$$

for $l, k, i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$ is equivalent to solving the classical EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau) Y(\tau) = \frac{L}{\theta^2 Y(\tau)^3} \tag{5.50}$$

for constants $\theta, L > 0$. The solutions of $(I_0)', (I_1)', \ldots, (I_d)'$ and (5.50) are related by

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{d\kappa} Q(\tau) \tag{5.51}$$

for $q \neq 0$, $\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t))$, $R(t) \overset{def.}{=} (a_1(t) \cdots a_d(t))^{1/q}$ and

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^{2q} = \theta Y(\tau(t))^2, \tag{5.52}$$

for any $\theta > 0$. Also we define the constant

$$L \overset{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-1)} \sum_{2<l<k\leq d} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j^2, \tag{5.53}$$

where $\mu_i \in \mathbb{R}$ are such that $a_i(t) = c_i e^{\mu_i t} a_1(t)$ for some $c_i \in \mathbb{R}, i \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$. In the converse direction we also define

$$a_1(t) = R(t)^{q/d} (\omega_2 \cdots \omega_d e^{(\mu_2 + \cdots + \mu_d)t})^{-1/d} \tag{5.54}$$

and take V to be

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa} \left(\theta^2 (Y')^2 + \frac{L}{Y^2} \right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2} (\varphi')^2 Y^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t). \tag{5.55}$$

119

5.2   In terms of Schrödinger-Type Formulation

To reformulate the Bianchi I Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ in (5.2) in terms of an equation with one less non-linear term than that which is provided by the generalized EMP formulation, one can apply Corollary 2.3.1 to the difference $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ (and similar to above, define $V \circ \phi$ in u−notation to be such that (I_0) holds). Below is the resulting statement.

Theorem 5.2.1 *Suppose you are given twice differentiable functions $a_1(t), \ldots, a_d(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ for some $\Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0, 1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$. Denote*

$$R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (a_1(t) \cdots a_d(t))^\nu \tag{5.56}$$

for some $\nu \neq 0$, then the functions

$$u(\sigma) = R(\sigma + t_0)^{-1/\nu} \tag{5.57}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{d\kappa}{(d-1)}\psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{5.58}$$

solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E - P(\sigma)] u(\sigma) = \frac{d\kappa(\rho(\sigma) + \mathrm{p}(\sigma))}{(d-1)u(\sigma)} \tag{5.59}$$

for

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(\sigma + t_0) \tag{5.60}$$

$$\rho(\sigma) = \rho(\sigma + t_0), \ \mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(\sigma + t_0). \tag{5.61}$$

and where

$$E \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-1)}\sum_{l<k}\mu_l\mu_k - \sum_{j=1}^{d}\mu_j^2 \tag{5.62}$$

120

for constants μ_j such that $a_j(t) = \omega_j e^{\mu_j t} a_1(t)$ for some $\omega_j > 0, j \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$.

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$, and also functions $P(\sigma)$ and $\rho(\sigma), p(\sigma)$ which solve (5.59) for some constants $E < 0, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ and $d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0, 1\}$. Then we define $\psi(\sigma)$ such that

$$\psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{d\kappa} P(\sigma), \tag{5.63}$$

and constants $\mu_i, i \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$ which satisfy

$$E = \frac{2}{(d-1)} \sum_{l < k} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j^2, \tag{5.64}$$

and let

$$R(t) = u(t - t_0)^{-\nu}. \tag{5.65}$$

Then the functions

$$a_1(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} (\omega_2 \cdots \omega_d e^{(\mu_2 + \cdots + \mu_d)t})^{-1/d} \tag{5.66}$$

$$a_i(t) = \omega_i e^{\mu_i t} a_1(t) \tag{5.67}$$

$$\phi(t) = \psi(t - t_0) \tag{5.68}$$

$$\rho(t) = \rho(t - t_0), \qquad p(t) = p(t - t_0) \tag{5.69}$$

and

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa} \left((u')^2 + Eu^2 \right) - \frac{1}{2}(\psi')^2 u^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} - \rho \right] \circ (t - t_0) \tag{5.70}$$

satisfy the equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ for any $\omega_i > 0, 2 \leq i \leq d$.

Proof. This proof will implement Corollary 2.3.2 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 7. Corollary 2.3.2 applied to conformal Bianchi I

In Corollary	substitute	In Corollary	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	N	1
δ	$-1/\nu$	ε	$\nu d\kappa/(d-1)$
$G(t)$	constant νE	A	0
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t)+p(t))$	A_1	$-2/\nu$
$F_1(\sigma)$	$\frac{d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(\sigma)+\mathrm{p}(\sigma))$	C_1	1

Much of this proof will rely on computations that are exactly the same as those seen in the proof of Theorem 5.1.1 (the generalized EMP formulation of conformally Bianchi I). Therefore we will restate the relevant results here, but point the reader to the details in the proof of Theorem 5.1.1.

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$. Since the right-hand sides of Einstein equation (I_i) are all the same for $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$, we begin by equating the left-hand side of (I_1) with the left-hand side of any (I_j) for $j \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$ since it will give us a simplifying relation among the scale factors $a_1(t), \ldots, a_d(t)$. Exactly this was done in (5.18)-(5.23) so that again we obtain

$$H_j = H_1 + \mu_j \tag{5.71}$$

and

$$a_j(t) = \omega_j e^{\mu_j t} a_1(t) \tag{5.72}$$

for $\omega_j > 0, \mu_j \in \mathbb{R}, j \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$, and $\mu_1 = 0, \omega_1 = 1$. This allows us to follow the arguments given in (5.24)-(5.36), so that the Einstein equations (I_0) and (I_i) for $1 \leq i \leq d$ can be written as

$$\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d}H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)}{2d}E \overset{(I_0)'}{=} \kappa\left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + R^{2/\nu}\left(V \circ \phi + \rho + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right]$$

122

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R - \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d}H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)}{2d}E \stackrel{(I_i)'}{=} \kappa\left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + R^{2/\nu}\left(V\circ\phi - p + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right].$$

where again $R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (a_1(t)\cdots a_d(t))^\nu$ for $\nu \neq 0$ by (5.56),

$$L \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-1)}\sum_{l<k}\mu_l\mu_k - \sum_{j=1}^{d}\mu_j^2 = E \text{ (by (5.62))} \tag{5.73}$$

and

$$H_R \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R}, \tag{5.74}$$

so that

$$H_1 = \frac{1}{\nu d}H_R - \frac{1}{d}\sum_{j=1}^{d}\mu_j \tag{5.75}$$

$$\dot{H}_1 = \frac{1}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R. \tag{5.76}$$

Again we form the linear combination $(I_0)' - (I_i)'$, multiply by $\frac{-\nu d}{(d-1)}$, and obtain

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{1}{\nu}H_R^2 - \nu E = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + R^{2/\nu}(\rho + p)\right]. \tag{5.77}$$

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Corollary 2.3.2, applied with constants $\epsilon, \varepsilon, N, A, A_1\ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 7. Since $u(\sigma), P(\sigma)$ and $\psi(\sigma)$ defined in (5.57)-(5.58) and (5.60) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Corollary 2.3.1, by this corollary and by definition (5.61) of $\rho(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$, the Schrödinger-type equation (2.130) holds for constants $C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 7. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation (5.59) and we will show that equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ are satisfied. To show that (I_0) is satisfied, we differentiate the definition of $R(t)$ in (5.65) to obtain

$$\dot{R}(t) = -\nu u(t - t_0)^{-\nu-1}u'(t - t_0). \tag{5.78}$$

Dividing by $R(t)$, we have

$$H_R \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R} = -\nu \frac{u'(t - t_0)}{u(t - t_0)}. \tag{5.79}$$

Differentiating the definition (5.68) of $\phi(t)$, we get that

$$\dot{\phi}(t) = \psi'(t - t_0). \tag{5.80}$$

Using (5.79) and (5.80), and also the definitions (5.65) and (5.69) of $R(t)$ and $\rho(t)$ respectively, the definition (5.70) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{R^{2/\nu}} \left[\frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d} \right) - \frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}^2 \right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} - \rho. \tag{5.81}$$

The quantity in parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, note that the definitions of $a_1(t), a_i(t)$ in (5.66), (5.67) and also $H_R \overset{def.}{=} \dot{R}/R$ are the same as those in Theorem 5.1.1. Therefore we may follow the arguments given in (5.26)-(5.35) and (5.43)-(5.45) to see that the identity

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)}{2d} E \tag{5.82}$$

still holds in the converse direction (since (7.85) in Theorem 5.1.1 and (5.11) here show that $L = E$). This shows that (5.81) can be written

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{R^{2/\nu}} \left[\frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k \right) - \frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}^2 \right] - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} - \rho \tag{5.83}$$

so that (I_0) holds under the assumptions of the converse implication.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Corollary 2.3.2 holds, applied with constants $N, C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 7. Since $\psi(\sigma), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (5.63), (5.65) and (5.68) are consistent with the converse implication of Corollary 2.3.2, applied with $a(t)$ and

δ, ε as in Table 7, by this corollary and by the definition (5.69) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.125) holds for constants $\delta, \varepsilon, A, A_1, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 7. That is, we have regained (5.77). Now solving (5.81) for $R^{2/\nu}\rho(t)$ and substituting this into (5.77), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{1}{2\nu}H_R^2 - \frac{\nu}{2}E = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + R^{2/\nu}\left(-V \circ \phi + p - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right]. \quad (5.84)$$

Multiplying by $\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}$ and rearranging, we get that

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R - \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d}H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)}{2d}E = \kappa\left[-\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + R^{2/\nu}\left(V \circ \phi - p + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right]. \quad (5.85)$$

As noted above, the computations (5.26)-(5.35) from Theorem 5.1.1 still hold in this theorem, in the converse direction. Therefore the left-hand side of (5.85) is in fact equal to the left-hand side of (I_i) for any $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. Since $R = (a_1 \cdots a_d)^\nu$, the right-hand side of (5.85) agrees with the right-hand side of (I_i) for any $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. This proves the theorem. $\diamond$

5.2.1 Reduction to linear Schrödinger: pure scalar field

By applying Theorem 5.2.1 with $\rho = p = 0$, we obtain a linear Schrödinger equation. We now refer to Appendix E for solutions of the linear Schrödinger equation.

Example 37 *For $\vartheta = \nu = 1$ and choice of constant $E = -1$, we take solution 4 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$, $a_0 = 1$ and $b_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = e^{-\sigma}$ and $P(\sigma) = 0$. By (5.65),*

$$R(t) = \frac{1}{u(t - t_0)} = e^{t-t_0} \quad (5.86)$$

so that

$$\begin{aligned}
a_1(t) &= R(t)^{1/d}e^{-(\mu_2+\cdots+\mu_d)t/d} \\
&= e^{(1-\mu_2-\cdots-\mu_d)(t-t_1)/d}, \quad (5.87)
\end{aligned}$$

$$a_i(t) = e^{\mu_i t} a_1(t)$$

$$= e^{((1-\mu_2-\cdots-\mu_d)/d+\mu_i)(t-t_1)} \tag{5.88}$$

for constants μ_i that satisfy

$$E = -1 = \frac{2}{(d-1)} \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j^2. \tag{5.89}$$

Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, we get

$$\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0 \tag{5.90}$$

for constant $\psi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (5.70), we obtain constant potential

$$V(\phi(t)) = = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa} \left((u')^2 - u^2 \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ (t - t_0)$$

$$= -\frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{5.91}$$

For example when $d = 3$, we can take $\mu_2 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$ and $\mu_3 = \frac{2}{\sqrt{3}}$ to obtain the vacuum solution

$$a_1(t) = e^{(1-\sqrt{3})(t-t_1)/3}$$

$$a_2(t) = e^{(t-t_1)/3}$$

$$a_3(t) = e^{(1+\sqrt{3})(t-t_1)/3}$$

$$\phi(t) = \phi_0$$

$$V = -\Lambda/\kappa. \tag{5.92}$$

For $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $R(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows three orders of magnitude over the graphed time interval.

Figure 28. Instability of conformal Bianchi I Example 37
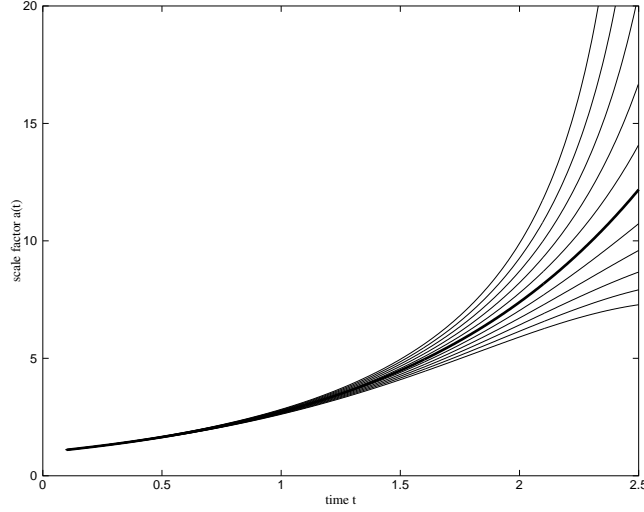
Example 38 *For $\vartheta = 1$, $n = 6$, $\nu = 1$ and choice of constant $E = -1$, we take the negative of solution 4 in Table 15 with $c_0 = -1$ and $a_0, b_0 > 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = b_0 e^{\sigma} - a_0 e^{-\sigma}$ and $P(\sigma) = 0$. By (5.65)*

$$R(t) = \frac{1}{u(t - t_0)} = \frac{1}{b_0 e^{(t-t_0)} - a_0 e^{-(t-t_0)}} \tag{5.93}$$

so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_1(t) &= R(t)^{1/d} e^{-(\mu_2 + \cdots + \mu_d)t/d} \\
&= \frac{e^{-(\mu_2 + \cdots + \mu_d)t/d}}{\left(b_0 e^{(t-t_0)} - a_0 e^{-(t-t_0)}\right)^{1/d}},
\end{aligned} \tag{5.94}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_i(t) &= e^{\mu_i t} a_1(t) \\
&= \frac{e^{-(\mu_2 + \cdots + \mu_d)t/d + \mu_i t}}{\left(b_0 e^{(t-t_0)} - a_0 e^{-(t-t_0)}\right)^{1/d}}
\end{aligned} \tag{5.95}
$$

for constants μ_i that satisfy

$$E = -1 = \frac{2}{(d-1)} \sum_{l < k} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=1}^{d} \mu_j^2. \tag{5.96}$$

Since $P = 0 = \psi'(\sigma)$, we have

$$\psi(\sigma) = \psi_0 \tag{5.97}$$

for constant $\psi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Finally, by (5.70), we obtain constant potential

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa} \left((u')^2 - u^2 \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ (t - t_0) \\
&= \frac{2(d-1)a_0 b_0}{d\kappa} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned} \tag{5.98}
$$

since $\cosh^2(x) - \sinh^2(x) = 1$.

For example when $d = 3$, we can take $a_0 = b_0 = 1$, $\mu_2 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$ and $\mu_3 = \frac{2}{\sqrt{3}}$ to obtain the solution

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_1(t) &= \left(\frac{1}{2} csch(t - t_0) \right)^{1/3} e^{-t/\sqrt{3}} \\
a_2(t) &= \left(\frac{1}{2} csch(t - t_0) \right)^{1/3} \\
a_3(t) &= \left(\frac{1}{2} csch(t - t_0) \right)^{1/3} e^{t/\sqrt{3}} \\
\phi(t) &= \phi_0 \\
V &= \frac{4}{3\kappa} - \Lambda/\kappa.
\end{aligned} \tag{5.99}
$$

For $a_0 = b_0 = 1$ and $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .01. The graphs of $R(t)$ below show that the solution is stable.

Figure 29. Instability of conformal Bianchi I Example 38
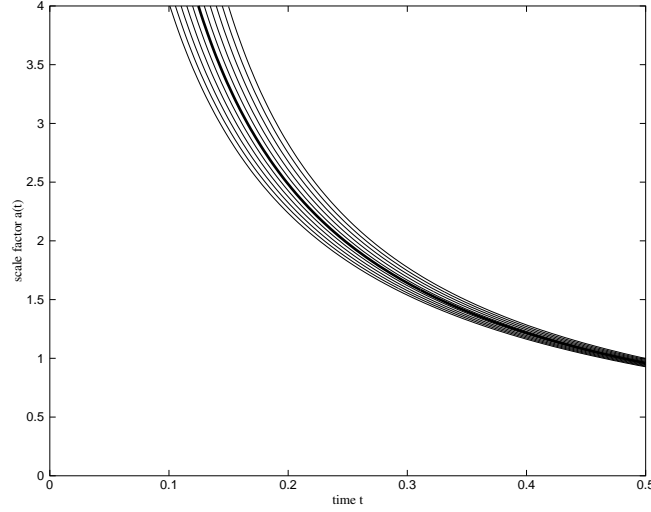
Example 39 *For $\vartheta = \nu = 1$ and choice of constant $E = -1$, we take solution 5 in table 15 with $c_0 = -1$, $a_0 = 1$ and $b_0 = 0$ so that we have $u(\sigma) = (1/\sigma)e^{-\sigma^2/2}$ and $P(\sigma) = \sigma^2 + 2/\sigma^2$. By (5.65)*

$$R(t) = \frac{1}{u(t - t_0)} = (t - t_0)e^{(t-t_0)^2/2} \tag{5.100}$$

so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_1(t) &= R(t)^{1/d}e^{-(\mu_2+\cdots+\mu_d)t/d} \\
&= (t - t_0)^{1/d}e^{(t-t_0)^2/2d}e^{-(\mu_2+\cdots+\mu_d)t/d}, \tag{5.101}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_i(t) &= e^{\mu_i t}a_1(t) \\
&= (t - t_0)^{1/d}e^{(t-t_0)^2/2d}e^{(-(\mu_2+\cdots+\mu_d)/d+\mu_i)t} \tag{5.102}
\end{aligned}
$$

for constants μ_i that satisfy

$$E = -1 = \frac{2}{(d-1)}\sum_{l<k}\mu_l\mu_k - \sum_{j=1}^{d}\mu_j^2. \tag{5.103}$$

129

By (E.40) with $\alpha_0 = (d-1)/d\kappa$, we have scalar field

$$\phi(t) = \psi(t - t_0)$$
$$= \frac{\sqrt{(d-1)}}{2\sqrt{d\kappa}} \left(\sqrt{(t-t_0)^4 + 2} + \sqrt{2} \ln \left[\frac{(t-t_0)^2}{2\sqrt{2}\sqrt{(t-t_0)^4 + 2} + 4} \right] \right) + \beta_0$$

$$(5.104)$$

and finally by (5.70),

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa} \left((u')^2 - u^2 \right) - \frac{1}{2}(\psi')^2 u^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ (t - t_0)$$
$$= \frac{(d-1)}{2d\kappa} e^{-(t-t_0)^2} \left(\frac{1}{(t-t_0)^2} - \frac{1}{(t-t_0)^4} \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \quad (5.105)$$

For example when $d = 3$, we can take $t_0 = 0$, $\mu_2 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$ and $\mu_3 = \frac{2}{\sqrt{3}}$ to obtain the solution

$$a_1(t) = t^{1/3} e^{t^2/6 - t/\sqrt{3}}$$

$$a_2(t) = t^{1/3} e^{t^2/6}$$

$$a_3(t) = t^{1/3} e^{t^2/6 + t/\sqrt{3}}$$

$$\phi(t) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{6\kappa}} \left(t\sqrt{t^2 + 2} + \sqrt{2} \ln \left[\frac{t^2}{2\sqrt{2}\sqrt{t^4 + 2} + 4} \right] \right)$$

$$V(\phi(t)) = \frac{1}{3\kappa} e^{-t^2} \left(\frac{1}{t^2} - \frac{1}{t^4} \right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \quad (5.106)$$

For $t_0 = 0$, the solver was run with u, u' and σ perturbed by .001. The graphs of $R(t)$ below show that the solution is unstable. The absolute error grows up to three orders of magnitude in the small graphed time interval.

Figure 30. Instability of conformal Bianchi I Example 39
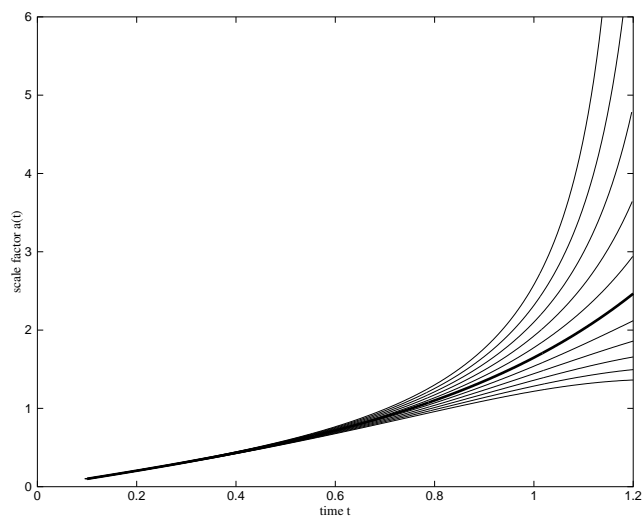
C H A P T E R   6

REFORMULATIONS OF A BIANCHI V MODEL

For the inhomogeneous, anisotropic Bianchi V metric

$$ds^2 = -dt^2 + X_1^2(t)dx_1^2 + \sum_{i=2}^{d} e^{2\beta x_1} X_i(t)^2 dx_i^2 \tag{6.1}$$

in a $d+1-$dimensional spacetime for $d \neq 0, 1$ and $\beta \neq 0$, the nonzero Einstein's equations $g^{ij}G_{ij} = -\kappa g^{ij}T_{ij} + \Lambda$ are

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \stackrel{(I_0)}{=} \kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + V \circ \phi + \rho \right] + \Lambda \tag{6.2}$$

$$\sum_{l \neq 1}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq 1}} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \stackrel{(I_1)}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda$$

$$\vdots$$

$$\sum_{l \neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \stackrel{(I_i)}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda$$

$$\vdots$$

$$\sum_{l \neq d}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq d}} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \stackrel{(I_d)}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda$$

where $H_l(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \dot{a}_l/a_l$ and $i, l, k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. There is one more equation, the off-diagonal entry $G_{01} = -\kappa T_{01} + \Lambda g_{01}$ which states

$$\beta \sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l - (d-1)\beta H_1 \stackrel{(I_{01})}{=} 0. \tag{6.3}$$

6.1 In terms of a Generalized EMP

Theorem 6.1.1 *Suppose you are given twice differentiable functions $X_1(t), \ldots, X_d(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ in (6.2) and (I_{01}) in (6.3) for some $\Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0, 1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ and $M \in \mathbb{N}$. Denote*

$$R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))^\nu \tag{6.4}$$

for some $\nu \neq 0$. If $f(\tau)$ is the inverse of a function $\tau(t)$ which satisfies

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^q \tag{6.5}$$

for some constants $\theta > 0$ and $q \neq 0$, then

$$Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q \qquad and \qquad Q(\tau) = \frac{q\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\varphi'(\tau)^2 \tag{6.6}$$

solve the generalized EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{-2q\nu d\kappa D}{\theta^2(d-1)Y(\tau)^{(2+q\nu)/q\nu}} - \frac{q\nu d\beta^2}{\theta^2 e^{2\alpha_1}Y(\tau)^{(2+q\nu d)/q\nu d}}$$

$$- \sum_{i=1}^{M} \frac{q\nu d\kappa\,(\varrho_i(\tau) + \mathrm{p}_i(\tau))}{\theta^2(d-1)Y(\tau)} \tag{6.7}$$

for some $\alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$\varphi(\tau) = \phi(f(\tau)) \tag{6.8}$$

$$\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau)), \ \mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau)) \tag{6.9}$$

and where

$$D \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{1}{2d\kappa}X_1^2 X_2^2 \cdots X_d^2 \left(\sum_{l<k}\eta_{lk}^2\right) \tag{6.10}$$

is a constant for

$$\eta_{lk} \stackrel{def.}{=} H_l - H_k, \ l \neq k, l, \ k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}. \tag{6.11}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $Y(\tau) > 0$, a continuous function $Q(\tau)$, and also functions $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$ which solve (6.7) for some constants $\theta > 0$ and $q, \nu, \kappa \in \mathbb{R} \backslash \{0\}, k, D, \alpha_1, \beta \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N} \backslash \{0, 1\}$. In order to construct functions which solve $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d), (I_{01})$, first find $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau)$ which solve the differential equations

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t)) \qquad and \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{q\nu d\kappa} Q(\tau). \tag{6.12}$$

Next find a function $\sigma(t)$ such that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\dot{\tau}(t)^{1/q\nu}} \tag{6.13}$$

and let

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} \qquad and \qquad \alpha_l(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} c_l \sigma(t), \ l \in \{2, \ldots, d\} \tag{6.14}$$

where c_l are any constants for which both

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad and \qquad \sum_{2 \le l < k \le d} c_l c_k = -\theta^{2/q\nu} D\kappa. \tag{6.15}$$

Then the functions

$$X_1(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_1}, \ \alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R} \tag{6.16}$$

$$X_l(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)}, \ \ 2 \le l \le d \tag{6.17}$$

$$\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)) \tag{6.18}$$

$$\rho(t) = \varrho(\tau(t)), \ p(t) = \mathrm{p}(\tau(t)) \tag{6.19}$$

and

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)\theta^2}{2\nu^2 d\kappa q^2} (Y')^2 - \frac{D}{Y^{2/q\nu}} - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2\kappa e^{2\alpha_1} Y^{2/q\nu d}} - \frac{\theta^2}{2} Y^2 (\varphi')^2 - \varrho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \tag{6.20}$$

satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$.

Proof. This proof will implement Theorem 2.1.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 8.   Theorem 2.1.1 applied to Bianchi V

In Theorem	substitute	In Theorem	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	N	1
δ	0	ε	$\nu d\kappa/(d-1)$
$G_0(t)$	constant $-2\nu d\kappa D/(d-1)$	A_0	$2/\nu$
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t)+p(t))$	A_1	0
$G_2(t)$	constant $-\nu d\beta^2 e^{-2\alpha_1}$	A_2	$2/\nu d$
$\lambda_0(\tau)$	constant $-2q\nu d\kappa D/\theta^2(d-1)$	B_0	$(2+q\nu)/q\nu$
$\lambda_1(\tau)$	$\frac{-q\nu d\kappa}{\theta^2(d-1)}(\varrho(\tau)+\mathrm{p}(\tau))$	B_1	1
$\lambda_2(\tau)$	constant $-q\nu d\beta^2/\theta^2 e^{2\alpha_1}$	B_2	$(2+q\nu d)/q\nu d$

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$. Forming the linear combination $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ of Einstein's equations, we have that

$$d\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \sum_{i=1}^{d}\sum_{l\neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{X_1^2} = d\kappa\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho+p)\right]$$

(6.21)

since $-d^2(d-1) + d(d-1)(d-2) = d(d-1)(-d+d-2) = -2d(d-1)$ and where the summing indices $l, k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. The first double sum in (6.21) contains the quantity $\frac{\ddot{X}_l}{X_l}$ $(d-1)$-times for any fixed l, and the second double sum contains the quantity $\frac{\dot{X}_l \dot{X}_k}{X_l X_k}$ $(d-2)$-times for any fixed l, k pair with $l < k$. Therefore (6.21) simplifies to

$$d\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - (d-1)\sum_{l=1}^{d}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) - (d-2)\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{X_1^2}$$
$$= d\kappa\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho+p)\right]. \qquad (6.22)$$

Collecting the first and third sums, we have

$$2\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - (d-1)\sum_{l=1}^{d}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{X_1^2} = d\kappa\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho+p)\right]. \quad (6.23)$$

Using the definition (6.4) of $R(t)$, we define

$$H_R \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R} = \frac{\nu(X_1\cdots X_d)^{\nu-1}\left(\dot{X}_1 X_2 \cdots X_d + \cdots + X_1 X_2 \cdots \dot{X}_d\right)}{(X_1 \cdots X_d)^{\nu}} = \nu\sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l. \quad (6.24)$$

Differentiating H_R gives

$$\dot{H}_R = \nu\sum_{l=1}^{d}\dot{H}_l. \quad (6.25)$$

Therefore (6.23) can be written as

$$2\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - (d-1)\left(\frac{1}{\nu}\dot{H}_R + \sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l^2\right) - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{X_1^2} = d\kappa\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho+p)\right]. \quad (6.26)$$

Multiplying by $\frac{-\nu}{(d-1)}$ and rearranging, we get

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu}{(d-1)}\left((d-1)\sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l^2 - 2\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k\right) + \frac{\nu d\beta^2}{X_1^2} = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho+p)\right]. \quad (6.27)$$

By definition (6.11) of the quantities η_{lk}, we have

$$\sum_{l<k}\eta_{lk}^2 = \sum_{l<k}\left(H_l^2 - 2H_l H_k + H_k^2\right). \quad (6.28)$$

The first and last terms on the right-hand side of (6.28) sum to

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l<k}\left(H_l^2 + H_k^2\right) &= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1}\sum_{k=l+1}^{d} H_l^2 + \sum_{k=2}^{d}\sum_{l=1}^{k-1} H_k^2 \\
&= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1}(d-l)H_l^2 + \sum_{k=2}^{d}(k-1)H_k^2 \\
&= (d-1)H_1^2 + \sum_{j=2}^{d-1} H_j^2 + \sum_{j=2}^{d-1}(j-1)H_j^2 + (d-1)H_d^2 \\
&= (d-1)\sum_{j=1}^{d} H_j^2 \quad (6.29)
\end{aligned}$$

therefore (6.28) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 = (d-1)\sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l^2 - 2\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k. \tag{6.30}$$

Using this to rewrite (6.27) shows that

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu}{(d-1)}\sum_{l<k}\eta_{lk}^2 + \frac{\nu d\beta^2}{X_1^2} = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p)\right]. \tag{6.31}$$

Next we will confirm that D is a constant. Since the right-hand sides of Einstein equations (I_i) are the same for all $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$, by equating the left-hand sides of any two equations (I_i) and (I_j) for $i \neq j$,

$$\sum_{l \neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \sum_{l \neq j}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq j}} H_l H_k \tag{6.32}$$

where we recall that the sum indices $l, k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. For the first sum on each side, the left and the right-hand sides of (6.32) contain all the same terms, except for the jth indexed term which appears on the left, and the ith indexed term which appears on the right. Therefore many terms cancel and we are left with

$$\dot{H}_j + H_j^2 + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \dot{H}_i + H_i^2 + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq j}} H_l H_k. \tag{6.33}$$

For the second (double) sum on each side, the left and right-hand sides of (6.33) contain all the same terms, except for the terms where either $l, k = j$ which appear on the left, and the terms where either $l, k = i$ which appear on the right. Therefore many terms cancel and we are left with

$$\dot{H}_j + H_j^2 + \sum_{l \neq j} H_j H_l = \dot{H}_i + H_i^2 + \sum_{l \neq i} H_i H_l. \tag{6.34}$$

Adding $-H_j^2 + H_j^2 = 0$ to the left and $-H_i^2 + H_i^2 = 0$ to the right, we obtain

$$\dot{\eta}_{ij} + \frac{1}{\nu}\eta_{ij}H_R = 0 \tag{6.35}$$

137

where we have used the expression (6.24) for H_R, the definition (6.11) of η_{ij}, and as usual dot denotes differentiation with respect to t. By Lemma A.1 with $\mu = 1/\nu \neq 0$, which applies since $R(t)$ is positive and differentiable, (6.35) shows that the function $f = \eta_{ij} R^{1/\nu} = \eta_{ij} X_1 X_2 \cdots X_d$ is constant for any pair i, j (for the pair $i = j$, f is clearly a constant function, namely zero). Therefore the definition (6.10) of D is also constant, being proportional to a sum of squares of these constant functions. By the definitions (6.10) and (6.4) of the constant D and the function $R(t)$, we now rewrite (6.31) as

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu d \beta^2}{X_1^2} = \frac{-\nu d \kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + \frac{2D}{R^{2/\nu}} + (\rho + p) \right]. \tag{6.36}$$

Finally, we use the remaining Einstein equation (I_{01}) and the relation $H_R = \nu \sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l$ in (6.24) to obtain

$$H_R = \nu d H_1. \tag{6.37}$$

That is, $\frac{d}{dt} \ln(R) = \nu d \frac{d}{dt} \ln(X_1)$ which implies $\ln(R) + c_0 = \nu d \ln(X_1)$ for some integration constant $c_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ so that

$$X_1 = e^{\alpha_1} R^{1/\nu d} \tag{6.38}$$

for arbitrary constant $\alpha_1 = -c_0/\nu d \in \mathbb{R}$. Therefore (6.36) becomes

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d \kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + \frac{2D}{R^{2/\nu}} + \frac{(d-1)\beta^2}{\kappa e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}} + (\rho + p) \right]. \tag{6.39}$$

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Theorem 2.1.1, applied with constants $\epsilon, \varepsilon, N, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 4. Since $\tau(t), Y(\tau), Q(\tau)$ and $\varphi(\tau)$ defined in (6.5), (6.6) and (6.8) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Theorem 2.1.1, by this theorem and by definition (6.9) of $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$, the generalized EMP equation (2.2) holds for

constants $B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 4. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the generalized EMP equation (6.7) and we begin by showing that (I_0) is satisfied. Differentiating the definition of $R(t)$ in (6.14) and using the definition in (6.12) of $\tau(t)$ shows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{R}(t) &= \frac{1}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{\frac{1}{q}-1} Y'(\tau(t)) \dot{\tau}(t) \\
&= \frac{\theta}{q} Y(\tau(t))^{1/q} Y'(\tau(t)).
\end{aligned}
\tag{6.40}
$$

Dividing by $R(t)$ gives

$$
H_R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)} = \frac{\theta}{q} Y'(\tau(t)).
\tag{6.41}
$$

Differentiating the definition (6.18) of $\phi(t)$ and using definition (6.12) of $\tau(t)$, we get

$$
\dot{\phi}(t) = \varphi'(\tau(t)) \dot{\tau}(t) = \theta \varphi'(\tau(t)) Y(\tau(t)).
\tag{6.42}
$$

Using (6.41) and (6.42), and also the definitions (6.14) and (6.19) of $R(t)$ and $\rho(t)$ respectively, the definition (6.20) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$
V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{D\kappa}{R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}} \right) - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\tag{6.43}
$$

The quantity in parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, we differentiate the definition (6.17) of $X_l(t)$, divide the result by X_l and use the definition (6.41) of H_R to obtain

$$
H_l \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{X}_l}{X_l} = \frac{\frac{1}{\nu d} R^{1/\nu d-1} \dot{R} e^{\alpha_l} + \dot{\alpha}_l R^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l}}{R^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l}} = \frac{1}{\nu d} H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l.
\tag{6.44}
$$

Therefore we have

$$
\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \sum_{l<k} \left(\frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{1}{\nu d}(\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k \right).
\tag{6.45}
$$

The first term on the right-hand side of (6.45) does not depend on the indices l, k, and is therefore equal to $\frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2$ times the quantity

$$\sum_{l<k} 1 = \sum_{k=2}^{d} \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} 1 = \sum_{k=2}^{d} (k-1) = \sum_{j=1}^{d-1} j = \frac{d(d-1)}{2}. \qquad (6.46)$$

The second term on the right-hand side of (6.45) sums to zero since

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l<k} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) &= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1} \sum_{k=l+1}^{d} \dot{\alpha}_l + \sum_{k=2}^{d} \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} \dot{\alpha}_k \\
&= \sum_{l=1}^{d-1} (d-l)\dot{\alpha}_l + \sum_{k=2}^{d} (k-1)\dot{\alpha}_k \\
&= (d-1)\dot{\alpha}_1 + \sum_{j=2}^{d-1} (d-j+j-1)\dot{\alpha}_j + (d-1)\dot{\alpha}_d \\
&= (d-1) \sum_{l=1}^{d} \dot{\alpha}_l \\
&= (d-1) \sum_{l=2}^{d} \dot{\alpha}_l \text{ since } \alpha_1 \text{ constant} \\
&= (d-1)\sigma(t) \sum_{l=2}^{d} c_l \\
&= 0 \qquad (6.47)
\end{aligned}$$

where on the last lines, we have used the definition (6.14) of $\alpha_l(t)$ for $l \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$ and the condition (6.15) on the constants c_l. For the third term on the right-hand side of (6.45), we use the definitions of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t), \tau(t)$ and $R(t)$ in (6.14), (6.13) and (6.12) to write

$$\dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k = c_l c_k \dot{\sigma}^2 = \frac{c_l c_k}{\dot{\tau}^{2/q\nu}} = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} (Y \circ \tau)^{2/q\nu}} = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}} \qquad (6.48)$$

for $l \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$. Therefore (6.45) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \sum_{2 \leq l < k \leq} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}} \qquad (6.49)$$

140

since $\dot\alpha_1 = 0$. Then by the condition (6.15) on the constants c_l, (6.49) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{D\kappa}{R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{6.50}$$

Using this and the definition (6.16) of $X_1(t) = e^{\alpha_1} R(t)^{1/\nu d}$, the expression (6.43) for V can now be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \right) - \frac{1}{2}\dot\phi^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}, \tag{6.51}$$

showing that (I_0) holds under the assumptions of the converse implication.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Theorem 2.1.1 holds, applied with constants $N, B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 4. Since $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (6.12), (6.14) and (6.18) are consistent with the converse implication of Theorem 2.1.1, applied with $a(t), \delta$ and ε as in Table 4, by this theorem and by the definition (6.19) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.1) holds for constants $\delta, \varepsilon, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 4. That is, we have regained (6.36). Now solving (6.43) for $\rho(t)$ and substituting this into (6.36), we obtain

$$\dot H_R = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot\phi^2 - V \circ \phi + \frac{D}{R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2\kappa e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}} + p + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d\kappa} H_R^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right]. \tag{6.52}$$

Multiplying by $\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}$ and rearranging we get

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot H_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{\kappa D}{R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}} = -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot\phi^2 - V \circ \phi + p \right] + \Lambda \tag{6.53}$$

The left-hand side of this equation is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of (I_i) for any $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. To see this, first recall (6.44) and write

$$\dot H_l + H_l^2 = \frac{1}{\nu d}\dot H_R + \frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \ddot\alpha_l + \frac{2}{\nu d}\dot\alpha_l H_R + \dot\alpha_l^2, \tag{6.54}$$

141

therefore for any fixed i

$$\sum_{l\neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) = \sum_{l\neq i}\left(\frac{1}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R + \frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2}H_R^2 + \ddot{\alpha}_l + \frac{2}{\nu d}\dot{\alpha}_l H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l^2\right). \qquad (6.55)$$

The last term on the right-hand side sums to zero since

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l\neq i}\dot{\alpha}_l^2 &= \sum_{l\neq i}\dot{\alpha}_l\Big(-\dot{\alpha}_i - \sum_{k\neq i, k\neq l}\dot{\alpha}_k\Big)\\
&= -\dot{\alpha}_i\sum_{l\neq i}\dot{\alpha}_l - 2\sum_{\substack{l<k\\l,k\neq i}}\dot{\alpha}_l\dot{\alpha}_k\\
&= \Big(\sum_{k\neq i}\dot{\alpha}_k\Big)\Big(\sum_{l\neq i}\dot{\alpha}_l\Big) - 2\sum_{\substack{l<k\\l,k\neq i}}\dot{\alpha}_l\dot{\alpha}_k\\
&= 0. \qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad (6.56)
\end{aligned}
$$

Since the first two terms on the right-hand side of (6.55) do not depend on the indices l, k, and also using the definitions (6.14) and (6.15) of α_l and the constants c_l to write $\sum_l \dot{\alpha}_l = 0 \Rightarrow \sum_{l\neq i}\dot{\alpha}_l = -\dot{\alpha}_i$, (6.55) becomes

$$\sum_{l\neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{\nu^2 d^2}H_R^2 - \frac{2}{\nu d}H_R\dot{\alpha}_i + \sum_{l\neq i}\ddot{\alpha}_l. \qquad (6.57)$$

By the definitions (6.14), (6.13) and (6.12) of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t), \tau(t)$ and $R(t)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{\alpha}_l(t)R(t)^{1/\nu} &= c_l\dot{\sigma}(t)R(t)^{1/\nu}\\
&= \frac{c_l}{\dot{\tau}(t)^{1/q\nu}}R(t)^{1/\nu}\\
&= \frac{c_l}{\theta^{1/q\nu}Y(\tau(t))^{1/q\nu}}R(t)^{1/\nu}\\
&= \frac{c_l}{\theta^{1/q\nu}} \text{ is a constant} \qquad\qquad (6.58)
\end{aligned}
$$

for $l \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$. By Lemma A.1 with $\mu = 1/\nu \neq 0$, which applies since $R(t)$ is a positive differentiable function, (6.58) shows that

$$\ddot{\alpha}_l + \frac{1}{\nu}\dot{\alpha}_l H_R = 0 \qquad (6.59)$$

for all $l \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$. Therefore in total, we have that (6.55) is

$$\sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{(2-d)}{\nu d} H_R \sum_{l \neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l. \tag{6.60}$$

To form the rest of the left-hand side of (I_i), again use (6.44) to obtain

$$H_l H_k = \frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{1}{\nu d} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k, \tag{6.61}$$

therefore for any fixed i

$$\sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l, k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l, k \neq i}} \left(\frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{1}{\nu d} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) H_R + \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k \right). \tag{6.62}$$

As we saw in (6.46), $\sum_{l<k} 1 = \frac{d(d-1)}{2}$ therefore the first term on the right-side of (6.62), which does not depend on the indices l, k, is equal to $\frac{1}{\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2$ times

$$\sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l, k \neq i}} 1 = \sum_{l < k} 1 - \sum_{l \neq i} 1 = \frac{d(d-1)}{2} - (d-1) = \frac{(d-1)(d-2)}{2}. \tag{6.63}$$

As we saw in (6.47), $\sum_{l<k} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) = 0$ therefore the second term on the right-hand side of (6.62) sums to $\frac{1}{\nu d} H_R$ times

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l, k \neq i}} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) &= \sum_{l < k} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_k) - \sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{\alpha}_l + \dot{\alpha}_i) \\
&= -\sum_{l \neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l - (d-1)\dot{\alpha}_i \\
&= \dot{\alpha}_i - (d-1)\dot{\alpha}_i \\
&= (2-d)\dot{\alpha}_i
\end{aligned} \tag{6.64}$$

where again we have used the definitions (6.14) and (6.15) of α_l and the constants c_l to write $\sum_{l \neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l = -\dot{\alpha}_i$. Considering the third term on the right-hand side of

143

(6.62), we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k &= -\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k + (\sum_{k\neq i} \dot{\alpha}_k)(\sum_{l\neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l) \\
&= -\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k - \dot{\alpha}_i \sum_{l\neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l \\
&= -\sum_{l<k} \dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k \\
&= -\sum_{2\leq l<k\leq d} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}} \qquad (6.65)
\end{aligned}
$$

where again we have used that $\sum_{l\neq i} \dot{\alpha}_l = -\dot{\alpha}_i$, and on the last line we recall (6.48) and also that α_1 is constant. So by (6.63), (6.64) and (6.65), in total (6.62) becomes

$$
\sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)(d-2)}{2\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{(2-d)}{\nu d} \dot{\alpha}_i H_R - \sum_{2\leq l<k\leq d} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}}. \qquad (6.66)
$$

By (6.60), (6.66) and the definition (6.38) of $X_1(t)$, the left-hand side of any (I_i) Einstein equation is

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\sum_{l\neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \\
&\quad = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{d(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 - \sum_{2\leq l<k\leq d} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^{2/q\nu} R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}}.
\end{aligned}
$$
$$(6.67)$$

Then by the condition (6.15) on the constants c_l, (6.67) becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\sum_{l\neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \\
&\quad = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{d(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d^2} H_R^2 + \frac{D\kappa}{R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}}. \qquad (6.68)
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore by (6.53) and (6.68), we obtain (I_i) for all $i \in \{1,\ldots,d\}$. This proves the theorem. $\qquad\diamond$

144

6.1.1 Reduction to classical EMP: pure scalar field

We take $\rho = p = D = 0$ and choose parameter $q = 1/d\nu$ in Theorem 6.1.1. Then $c_i = 0$ for all $2 \le i \le d$ and we take $\alpha_1 = 0$ so that $X_1(t) = \cdots = X_d(t)$ and by the theorem solving the Bianchi V Einstein equations

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \stackrel{(I_0)'}{=} \kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 + V \circ \phi\right] + \Lambda \tag{6.69}$$

$$\sum_{l\ne i}(\dot{H_l} + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\ne i}} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2X_1^2} \stackrel{(I_i)'}{=} -\kappa \left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V \circ \phi\right] + \Lambda$$

for $l, k, i \in \{1, \dots, d\}$ and

$$\beta \sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l - (d-1)\beta H_1 \stackrel{(I_{01})'}{=} 0. \tag{6.70}$$

is equivalent to solving the classical EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{-\beta^2}{\theta^2 Y(\tau)^3} \tag{6.71}$$

for constant $\theta > 0$. The solutions of $(I_0)', (I_1)', \dots, (I_d)'$ and $(I_{01})'$ in (6.69) and the solutions of (6.71) are related by

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{d\nu} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{\kappa}Q(\tau) \tag{6.72}$$

for $\nu \ne 0$, $\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t))$, $R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))^\nu$ and

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^{1/d\nu} = \theta Y(\tau(t)) \tag{6.73}$$

for any $\theta > 0$. In the converse direction

$$X_l(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} \tag{6.74}$$

for $1 \le l \le d$ and where V is taken to be

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{d(d-1)\theta^2}{2\kappa}(Y')^2 - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2\kappa Y^2} - \frac{\theta^2}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \tag{6.75}$$

We now refer to Appendix D with $\lambda_1 = -\beta^2/\theta^2 < 0$ for solutions of the classical EMP equation (6.71). Since by reducing to classical EMP we have taken $D = 0$ in (6.10), $c_2 = \cdots = c_d = 0$ and in this case we do not require $\sigma(t)$ from Appendix D. By comparing (6.73) and (D.5), we note to only consider solutions of (D.5) in Appendix D corresponding to $r_0 = 1$.

Example 40 *For $\theta = 1$ and choice of constants $\beta = \nu = 1$, we consider solution 5 in Table 14 with $d_0 = b_0 = 0$ and $c_0 = a_0 = 1$. That is, we have solution $Y(\tau) = (1 + 2\tau)^{1/2}$ to the classical EMP $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -1/Y(\tau)^3$ for $Q(\tau) = 0$. By (D.27) - (D.29) we have $\tau(t) = \frac{1}{2}\left((t - t_0)^2 - 1\right)$ and*

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^d = (t - t_0)^d \tag{6.76}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ so that

$$X_i(t) = R(t)^{1/d} = (t - t_0) \tag{6.77}$$

for $1 \leq i \leq d$. Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$,

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \tag{6.78}$$

for constant $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$, and by (6.75), (D.30) and (D.29), we obtain constant potential

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left((Y')^2 - \frac{1}{Y^2}\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= -\frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\end{aligned}
\tag{6.79}
$$

Since $H_l(t) = \dot{X}_l(t)/X_l(t) = 1/(t - t_0)$ for all $1 \leq l \leq d$, $\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \sum_{l<k} 1/(t - t_0)^2 = d(d-1)/2(t-t_0)^2$ so that Einstein equation $(I_0)'$ is satisfied. Also for any fixed i, $\sum_{l \neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k = \sum_{l \neq i} 0 + \left[d(d-1)/2 - (d-1)\right]/(t-t_0)^2 = (d-1)(d-2)/2(t-t_0)^2$ therefore the Einstein equations $(I_i)'$ for $1 \leq i \leq d$ are also satisfied. Of course, this is a vacuum solution.

146

Example 41 *For $\theta = 1$ and choice of constants $\beta = \nu = 1$, we consider solution 5 in Table 14 with $d_0 = a_0 = 0$, $b_0 = 4$ and $c_0 = 1$. That is, we have solution $Y(\tau) = (4\tau(t)^2 + 2\tau(t))^{1/2}$ to the classical EMP $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -1/Y(\tau)^3$ for $Q(\tau) = 0$. By (D.33) - (D.35) we have $\tau(t) = \frac{1}{8}\left(e^{2(t-t_0)} + e^{-2(t-t_0)} - 8\right)$ and*

$$
\begin{aligned}
R(t) &= Y(\tau(t))^d \\
&= \frac{1}{4^d}\left(e^{2(t-t_0)} - e^{-2(t-t_0)}\right)^d \\
&= \frac{1}{2^d}\sinh(2(t-t_0))^d
\end{aligned} \tag{6.80}
$$

for any $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ so that

$$
X_i(t) = R(t)^{1/d} = \frac{1}{2}\sinh(2(t-t_0)). \tag{6.81}
$$

Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$,

$$
\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \tag{6.82}
$$

for constant $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and by (6.75), (D.36) and (D.35), we obtain constant potential

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left((Y')^2 - \frac{1}{Y^2}\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{d(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(\frac{16cosh^2(2(t-t_0)) - 16}{4sinh^2(2(t-t_0))}\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \\
&= \frac{2d(d-1)}{\kappa} - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}
\end{aligned} \tag{6.83}
$$

Since $H_l(t) = \dot{X}_l(t)/X_l(t) = 2coth(t - t_0)$ for all $1 \leq l \leq d$, $\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k = \sum_{l<k}4coth^2(t - t_0) = 2d(d - 1)coth^2(t - t_0)$ so that the left side of the Einstein equation $(I_0)'$ is

$$
2d(d-1)coth^2(t - t_0) - 2d(d-1)csch^2(t - t_0) = 2d(d - 1) \tag{6.84}
$$

by the identity $coth^2(x) - csch^2(x) = 1$, and therefore $(I_0)'$ is satisfied by the solution. Also for any fixed i, $\sum_{l \neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k \neq i}}H_lH_k = (d -$

1) $\left(-4csch^2(t - t_0) + 4coth^2(t - t_0)\right) + \left[d(d - 1)/2 - (d - 1)\right] 4coth^2(t - t_0) = 4(d - 1) + 2(d - 1)(d - 2)coth^2(t - t_0)$ *therefore the left side of Einstein equations* $(I_i)'$ *for* $1 \leq i \leq d$ *equal*

$$4(d - 1) + 2(d - 1)(d - 2)coth^2(t - t_0) - 2(d - 1)(d - 2)csch^2(t - t_0)$$

$$= 4(d - 1) + 2(d - 1)(d - 2) = 2d(d - 1) \tag{6.85}$$

so that $(I_i)'$ *are also satisfied for* $1 \leq i \leq d$.

6.2   In terms of a Schrödinger-Type Equation

If one would like to reformulate the Einstein field equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ in (6.2) in terms of an equation with one less non-linear term than that which is provided by the generalized EMP formulation, one can apply Corollary 2.3.1 to the difference $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ (and similar to above, define $V \circ \phi$ in $u-$notation to be such that (I_0) holds). Below is the resulting statement.

Theorem 6.2.1 *Suppose you are given twice differentiable functions* $X_1(t), \ldots, X_d(t) > 0$, *a once differentiable function* $\phi(t)$, *and also functions* $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ *which satisfy the Einstein equations* $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ *for some* $\Lambda, \beta \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0, 1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$. *Let* $g(\sigma)$ *denote the inverse of a function* $\sigma(t)$ *which satisfies*

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta\left(X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t)\right)} \tag{6.86}$$

for some $\theta > 0$. *Then the following functions*

$$u(\sigma) = \left[\frac{1}{X_1 \cdots X_d}\right] \circ g(\sigma) \tag{6.87}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{d\kappa}{(d - 1)}\psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{6.88}$$

148

solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E - P(\sigma)] \, u(\sigma) = \frac{\theta^2 d\kappa(\rho(\sigma) + \mathrm{p}(\sigma))}{(d-1)u(\sigma)} + \frac{\theta^2 d\beta^2}{e^{2\alpha_1}u(\sigma)^{1-2/d}} \qquad (6.89)$$

for some $\alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(g(\sigma)) \qquad (6.90)$$

$$\rho(\sigma) = \rho(g(\sigma)), \ \mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(g(\sigma)). \qquad (6.91)$$

and where

$$E \overset{def.}{=} \frac{-\theta^2}{(d-1)} X_1^2 X_2^2 \cdots X_d^2 \sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 \qquad (6.92)$$

is a constant for

$$\eta_{lk} \overset{def.}{=} H_l - H_k, l \neq k, l, k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}. \qquad (6.93)$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$, *and also functions* $P(\sigma)$ *and* $\rho_i(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$ *which solve (6.89) for some constants* $E < 0, \theta > 0, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}, \beta, \alpha \in \mathbb{R}$ *and* $d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0,1\}$. *In order to construct functions which solve* $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$, *first find* $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma)$ *which solve the differential equations*

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta}u(\sigma(t)) \qquad and \qquad \psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{d\kappa}P(\sigma). \qquad (6.94)$$

Let

$$R(t) = u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu} \qquad \alpha_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} c_l\sigma(t), l \in \{1, \ldots, d\} \qquad (6.95)$$

where c_l *are any constants for which both*

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad and \qquad \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = \frac{(d-1)E}{2d}. \qquad (6.96)$$

Then the functions

$$X_1(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d}e^{\alpha_1}, \ \alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R} \qquad (6.97)$$

$$X_l(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d}e^{\alpha_l(t)}, \ \ 2 \leq l \leq d \qquad (6.98)$$

149

$$\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t)) \tag{6.99}$$

$$\rho(t) = \rho(\sigma(t)), \; p(t) = p(\sigma(t)) \tag{6.100}$$

and

$V(\phi(t))$

$$= \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2\theta^2 d\kappa}(u')^2 + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2\kappa}u^2 - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2\kappa e^{2\alpha_1}}u^{2/d} - \frac{1}{2\theta^2}u^2(\psi')^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \sigma(t) \tag{6.101}$$

satisfy the equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ *in (6.2).*

Proof. This proof will implement Corollary 2.3.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 9.   Corollary 2.3.1 applied to Bianchi V

In Corollary	substitute	In Corollary	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	ε	$\nu d\kappa/(d-1)$
$G(t)$	constant $\nu E/\theta^2$	A	$2/\nu$
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t) + p(t))$	A_1	0
$G_2(t)$	constant $-\nu d\beta^2 e^{-2\alpha_1}$	A_2	$2/\nu d$
$F_1(\sigma)$	$\frac{\theta^2 d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(\sigma) + p(\sigma))$	C_1	1
$F_2(\sigma)$	constant $\theta^2 d\beta^2 e^{-2\alpha_1}$	C_2	$1 - 2/d$

Much of this proof will rely on computations that are exactly the same as those seen in the proof of Theorem 6.1.1 (the generalized EMP formulation of Bianchi V). Therefore we will restate the relevant results here, but point the reader to the details in the proof of Theorem 6.1.1.

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ in (6.2). Forming the linear combination

$d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ of Einstein's equations and simplifying, as was done in (6.21) - (6.31),

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu}{(d-1)}\sum_{l<k}\eta_{lk}^2 + \frac{\nu d\beta^2}{X_1^2} = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p)\right]. \qquad (6.102)$$

where

$$H_R(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)} = \nu\sum_{l=1}^{d}H_l \qquad (6.103)$$

and

$$R(t) \overset{def.}{=} (X_1(t)\cdots X_d(t))^{\nu} \qquad (6.104)$$

for any $\nu \neq 0$. Next we will confirm that E is constant. As was done in (6.32)-(6.35), since the right-hand sides of Einstein's equations (I_i) are the same for all $i \in \{1,\ldots,d\}$, by equating the left-hand sides of any two equations (I_i) and (I_j) for $i \neq j$, and after some rearranging we obtain

$$\dot{\eta}_{ij} + \frac{1}{\nu}\eta_{ij}H_R = 0 \qquad (6.105)$$

for η_{ij} defined in (6.93). Therefore the definition (6.92) of E is constant, being proportional to a sum of squares of these constant functions. By the definitions (6.92) and (6.104) of the constant E and the function $R(t)$, we now rewrite (6.102) from above as

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu d\beta^2}{X_1^2} = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p)\right] + \frac{\nu E}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \qquad (6.106)$$

Finally, we use the remaining Einstein equation (I_{01}) and the relation $H_R = \nu\sum_{l=1}^{d}H_l$ in (6.103) to obtain

$$H_R = \nu d H_1 \qquad (6.107)$$

so that again we have

$$X_1 = e^{\alpha_1}R^{1/\nu d} \qquad (6.108)$$

for $\alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R}$ and (6.106) becomes

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p)\right] + \frac{\nu E}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{\nu d\beta^2}{e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}}. \qquad (6.109)$$

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with constants $\varepsilon, N, A, A_1 \ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 9. Since $\sigma(t), u(\sigma), P(\sigma)$ and $\psi(\sigma)$ defined in (6.86), (6.87), (6.88) and (6.90) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with constants and functions according to Table 9, by this corollary and by definition (6.91) of $\rho(\sigma), p(\sigma)$, the Schrödinger-type equation (2.110) holds for constants $C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 9. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation (6.89) and we begin by showing that (I_0) is satisfied. Differentiating the definition of $R(t)$ in (6.95) and using the definition in (6.94) of $\sigma(t)$,

$$\begin{aligned} \dot{R}(t) &= -\nu u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu-1} u'(\sigma(t)) \dot{\sigma}(t) \\ &= -\frac{\nu}{\theta} u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu} u'(\sigma(t)). \end{aligned} \qquad (6.110)$$

Dividing by $R(t)$,

$$H_R \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R} = -\frac{\nu}{\theta} u'(\sigma(t)). \qquad (6.111)$$

Differentiating the definition (6.99) of $\phi(t)$ and using the definition in (6.95) of $\sigma(t)$,

$$\dot{\phi}(t) = \psi'(\sigma(t)) \dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta} \psi'(\sigma(t)) u(\sigma(t)). \qquad (6.112)$$

Using (6.111) and (6.112), and also the definitions (6.95) and (6.100) of $R(t)$ and $\rho(t)$ respectively, the definition (6.101) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa}\left(\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}}\right) - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \qquad (6.113)$$

The quantity in parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, first note that the definitions $X_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)}$ in (6.98) and $H(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)}$ in (6.111), and the condition $\sum_l c_l = 0$, are the same as those in Theorem 4.1.1. Also by the definitions (6.95), (6.94) and (6.95) of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t)$ and $R(t)$, we obtain

$$\dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k = c_l c_k \dot{\sigma}^2 = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2}(u \circ \sigma)^2 = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R(t)^{2/\nu}}, \tag{6.114}$$

which is a slightly modified version of (6.48) from our computation in the proof of Theorem 4.1.1. Therefore by the arguments in (6.45)-(6.49), and using (6.114) to slightly modify the last term to apply here,

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \sum_{l<k} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{6.115}$$

Then by the condition (6.96) on the constants c_l, (6.115) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{6.116}$$

Using this and the definition (6.97) of $X_1(t) = e^{\alpha_1} R(t)^{1/\nu d}$, the expression (6.113) for V can now be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa}\left(\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2X_1^2}\right) - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}, \tag{6.117}$$

showing that (I_0) holds under the assumptions of the converse implication.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Corollary 2.3.1 holds, applied with constants $N, C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 9. Since $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (6.94), (6.95) and (6.99) are consistent with the converse implication of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with $a(t)$ and ε as in Table 9, by this corollary and by the definition (6.100) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.109) holds for constants $\varepsilon, A, A_1, \ldots, A_N$ and functions

$G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 9. That is, we have regained (6.109). Now solving (6.113) for $\rho(t)$ and substituting this into (6.109), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V\circ\phi + \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2\kappa R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2\kappa e^{2\alpha_1}R^{2/\nu d}} + p\right.$$
$$\left. + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d\kappa}H_R^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] + \frac{\nu E}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{\nu d\beta^2}{e^{2\alpha_1}R^{2/\nu d}}. \tag{6.118}$$

Multiplying by $\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}$ and rearranging,

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d}H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1}R^{2/\nu d}}$$
$$= -\kappa\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V\circ\phi + p\right] + \Lambda. \tag{6.119}$$

The left-hand side of this equation is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of (I_i) for any $i \in \{1,\ldots,d\}$. To see this, again we use that the definitions $X_l(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} R(t)^{1/\nu d}e^{\alpha_l(t)}$ in (6.98) and $H_R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)}$ in (6.111), and the condition $\sum_l c_l = 0$, are the same as those in Theorem 4.1.1. Also by the definitions (6.95) and (6.94) of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t)$ and $R(t)$, we obtain

$$\dot{\alpha}_l(t)R(t)^{1/\nu} = c_l\dot{\sigma}(t)R(t)^{1/\nu}$$
$$= \frac{c_l}{\theta}u(\sigma(t))R(t)^{1/\nu}$$
$$= \frac{c_l}{\theta} \text{ is a constant,} \tag{6.120}$$

which shows that

$$\ddot{\alpha}_l + \frac{1}{\nu}\dot{\alpha}_l H_R = 0 \tag{6.121}$$

holds here, as it does in Theorem 4.1.1. Therefore by the arguments in (6.54)-(6.67), and as above using (6.114) to slightly modify the last term of (6.67) to apply here,

$$\sum_{l\neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}}H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d}H_R^2 - \sum_{l<k}\frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{6.122}$$

154

Then by the condition (6.96) on the constants c_l and the definition (6.97) of $X_1(t)$, the left-hand side of any Einstein equation $(I_i), i > 0$ is

$$\sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2X_1^2}$$

$$= \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)E}{2d\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}}. \quad (6.123)$$

Combining (6.119) and (6.123), we obtain (I_i) for all $i \in \{1, \dots, d\}$. This proves the theorem. $\diamond$

6.3   In terms of an Alternate Schrödinger-Type Equation

Theorem 6.3.1 *Suppose you are given twice differentiable functions $X_1(t), \dots, X_d(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \dots, (I_d)$ in (6.2) for some $\Lambda, \beta \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N} \backslash \{0,1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R} \backslash \{0\}$. Let $g(\sigma)$ denote the inverse of a function $\sigma(t)$ which satisfies*

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))} \quad (6.124)$$

for some $\theta > 0$. Then the following functions

$$u(\sigma) = \left[\frac{1}{X_1 \cdots X_d} \right] \circ g(\sigma) \quad (6.125)$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{d\kappa}{(d-1)} \psi'(\sigma)^2 \quad (6.126)$$

solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E - P(\sigma)] u(\sigma) = \frac{\theta^2 d\kappa (\rho(\sigma) + p(\sigma))}{(d-1)u(\sigma)} - \frac{\theta^2 D}{\nu u(\sigma)^{1-d}} \quad (6.127)$$

for some $\alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(g(\sigma)) \quad (6.128)$$

155

$$\rho(\sigma) = \rho(g(\sigma)), \ \mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(g(\sigma)). \tag{6.129}$$

and where

$$E \overset{def.}{=} -\theta^2 d\beta^2 e^{-2\alpha_1}, \alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R} \tag{6.130}$$

and

$$D \overset{def.}{=} \frac{-\nu}{(d-1)} X_1^2 X_2^2 \cdots X_d^2 \sum_{l<k} \eta_{lk}^2 \tag{6.131}$$

is a constant for

$$\eta_{lk} \overset{def.}{=} H_l - H_k, l \neq k, l, k \in \{1, \ldots, d\}. \tag{6.132}$$

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$, and also functions $P(\sigma)$ and $\rho(\sigma), \mathrm{p}(\sigma)$ fwhich solve (6.127) for some constants $E < 0, \theta > 0, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}, \beta, \alpha \in \mathbb{R}$ and $d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0,1\}$. In order to construct functions which solve $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$, first find $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma)$ which solve the differential equations

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta} u(\sigma(t)) \qquad and \qquad \psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{d\kappa} P(\sigma). \tag{6.133}$$

Let

$$R(t) = u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu} \qquad \alpha_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} c_l \sigma(t), l \in \{1, \ldots, d\} \tag{6.134}$$

where c_l are any constants for which both

$$\sum_{l=1}^{d} c_l = 0 \qquad and \qquad \sum_{l<k} c_l c_k = \frac{(d-1)\theta^2 D}{2d\nu}. \tag{6.135}$$

Then the functions

$$X_1(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_1}, \ \alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R} \tag{6.136}$$

$$X_l(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)}, \quad 2 \leq l \leq d \tag{6.137}$$

$$\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t)) \tag{6.138}$$

$$\rho(t) = \rho(\sigma(t)), \ p(t) = \mathrm{p}(\sigma(t)) \tag{6.139}$$

and

$V(\phi(t))$

$$= \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2\theta^2 d\kappa}(u')^2 + \frac{(d-1)D}{2d\nu\kappa}u^2 - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2\kappa e^{2\alpha_1}}u^{2/d} - \frac{1}{2\theta^2}u^2(\psi')^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \sigma(t)$$

(6.140)

satisfy the equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$.

Proof. This proof will implement Corollary 2.3.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 10. Corollary 2.3.1 applied to Bianchi V, alternate

In Corollary	substitute	In Corollary	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	ε	$\nu d\kappa/(d-1)$
$G(t)$	constant $- \nu d\beta^2 e^{-2\alpha_1}$	A	$2/\nu d$
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t) + p(t))$	A_1	0
$G_2(t)$	constant D	A_2	$2/\nu$
$F_1(\sigma)$	$\frac{\theta^2 d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(\sigma) + p(\sigma))$	C_1	1
$F_2(\sigma)$	constant $-\theta^2 D/\nu$	C_2	$1 - d$

Much of this proof will rely on computations that are exactly the same as those seen in the proof of Theorem 6.1.1 (the generalized EMP formulation of Bianchi V). Therefore we will restate the relevant results here, but point the reader to the details in the proof of Theorem 6.1.1.

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ in (6.2). Forming the linear combination $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ of Einstein's equations and simplifying, as was done in (6.21) - (6.31),

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu}{(d-1)}\sum_{l<k}\eta_{lk}^2 + \frac{\nu d\beta^2}{X_1^2} = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p)\right].$$

(6.141)

157

where

$$H_R(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)} = \nu \sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l \qquad (6.142)$$

and

$$R(t) \overset{def.}{=} (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))^{\nu} \qquad (6.143)$$

for any $\nu \neq 0$. Next we will confirm that D is constant. As was done in (6.32)-(6.35), since the right-hand sides of Einstein's equations (I_i) are the same for all $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$, by equating the left-hand sides of any two equations (I_i) and (I_j) for $i \neq j$, and after some rearranging we obtain

$$\dot{\eta}_{ij} + \frac{1}{\nu} \eta_{ij} H_R = 0 \qquad (6.144)$$

for η_{ij} defined in (6.132). Therefore the definition (6.131) of D is constant, being proportional to a sum of squares of these constant functions. By the definitions (6.131) and (6.143) of the constant D and the function $R(t)$, we now rewrite (6.141) from above as

$$\dot{H}_R + \frac{\nu d \beta^2}{X_1^2} = \frac{-\nu d \kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (\rho + p) \right] + \frac{D}{R^{2/\nu}}. \qquad (6.145)$$

Finally, we use the remaining Einstein equation (I_{01}) and the relation $H_R = \nu \sum_{l=1}^{d} H_l$ in (6.142) to obtain

$$H_R = \nu d H_1 \qquad (6.146)$$

so that again we have

$$X_1 = e^{\alpha_1} R^{1/\nu d} \qquad (6.147)$$

for $\alpha_1 \in \mathbb{R}$ and (6.145) becomes

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d \kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + \sum_{i=1}^{M} (\rho_i + p_i) \right] + \frac{D}{R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{\nu d \beta^2}{e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}}. \qquad (6.148)$$

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with constants $\varepsilon, N, A, A_1 \ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$

according to Table 10. Since $\sigma(t), u(\sigma), P(\sigma)$ and $\psi(\sigma)$ defined in (6.124), (6.125), (6.126) and (6.128) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with constants and functions according to Table 10, by this corollary and by definition (6.129) of $\rho(\sigma), p(\sigma)$, the Schrödinger-type equation (2.110) holds for constants $C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 10. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation (6.127) and we begin by showing that (I_0) is satisfied. Differentiating the definition of $R(t)$ in (6.134) and using the definition in (6.133) of $\sigma(t)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\dot{R}(t) &= -\nu u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu-1} u'(\sigma(t)) \dot{\sigma}(t) \\
&= -\frac{\nu}{\theta} u(\sigma(t))^{-\nu} u'(\sigma(t)).
\end{aligned}
\tag{6.149}
$$

Dividing by $R(t)$,

$$
H_R \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R} = -\frac{\nu}{\theta} u'(\sigma(t)).
\tag{6.150}
$$

Differentiating the definition (6.138) of $\phi(t)$ and using the definition in (6.134) of $\sigma(t)$,

$$
\dot{\phi}(t) = \psi'(\sigma(t)) \dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta} \psi'(\sigma(t)) u(\sigma(t)).
\tag{6.151}
$$

Using (6.150) and (6.151), and also the definitions (6.134) and (6.139) of $R(t)$ and $\rho_i(t)$ respectively, the definition (6.140) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$
V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)D}{2d\nu R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}} \right) - \frac{1}{2} \dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.
\tag{6.152}
$$

The quantity in parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, first note that the definitions $X_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} R(t)^{1/\nu d} e^{\alpha_l(t)}$ in (6.137) and $H(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)}$ in (6.150), and the condition $\sum_l c_l = 0$, are the same as those

159

in Theorem 4.1.1. Also by the definitions (6.134), (6.133) and (6.134) of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t)$ and $R(t)$, we obtain

$$\dot{\alpha}_l \dot{\alpha}_k = c_l c_k \dot{\sigma}^2 = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2}(u \circ \sigma)^2 = \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R(t)^{2/\nu}}, \tag{6.153}$$

which is a slightly modified version of (6.48) from our computation in the proof of Theorem 4.1.1. Therefore by the arguments in (6.45)-(6.49), and using (6.153) to slightly modify the last term to apply here,

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \sum_{l<k} \frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{6.154}$$

Then by the condition (6.135) on the constants c_l, (6.154) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-1)D}{2d\nu R^{2/\nu}}. \tag{6.155}$$

Using this and the definition (6.136) of $X_1(t) = e^{\alpha_1} R(t)^{1/\nu d}$, the expression (6.152) for V can now be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{\kappa}\left(\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2X_1^2}\right) - \frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}, \tag{6.156}$$

showing that (I_0) holds under the assumptions of the converse implication.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Corollary 2.3.1 holds, applied with constants $N, C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 10. Since $\sigma(t), \psi(\sigma), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (6.133), (6.134) and (6.138) are consistent with the converse implication of Corollary 2.3.1, applied with $a(t)$ and ε as in Table 10, by this corollary and by the definition (6.139) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.109) holds for constants $\varepsilon, A, A_1, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 10. That is, we have regained (6.148). Now solving (6.152) for $\rho(t)$ and substituting this into (6.148), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R = \frac{-\nu d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V\circ\phi + \frac{(d-1)D}{2d\nu\kappa R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{d(d-1)\beta^2}{2\kappa e^{2\alpha_1}R^{2/\nu d}} + p\right.$$

$$\left. + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d\kappa}H_R^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] + \frac{D}{R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{\nu d\beta^2}{e^{2\alpha_1}R^{2/\nu d}}. \qquad (6.157)$$

Multiplying by $\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}$ and rearranging,

$$\frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d}H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)D}{2d\nu R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1}R^{2/\nu d}}$$

$$= -\kappa\left[\frac{1}{2}\dot{\phi}^2 - V\circ\phi + p\right] + \Lambda. \qquad (6.158)$$

The left-hand side of this equation is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of (I_i) for any $i \in \{1,\ldots,d\}$. To see this, again we use that the definitions $X_l(t) \overset{def.}{=} R(t)^{1/\nu d}e^{\alpha_l(t)}$ in (6.137) and $H_R(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)}$ in (6.150), and the condition $\sum_l c_l = 0$, are the same as those in Theorem 4.1.1. Also by the definitions (6.134) and (6.133) of $\alpha_l(t), \sigma(t)$ and $R(t)$, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
\dot{\alpha}_l(t)R(t)^{1/\nu} &= c_l\dot{\sigma}(t)R(t)^{1/\nu} \\
&= \frac{c_l}{\theta}u(\sigma(t))R(t)^{1/\nu} \\
&= \frac{c_l}{\theta} \text{ is a constant,} \qquad (6.159)
\end{aligned}$$

which shows that

$$\ddot{\alpha}_l + \frac{1}{\nu}\dot{\alpha}_l H_R = 0 \qquad (6.160)$$

holds here, as it does in Theorem 4.1.1. Using the arguments in (6.54)-(6.67) and also using (6.153) to slightly modify one term in (6.67) to apply here, we obtain

$$\sum_{l\neq i}(\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l<k \\ l,k\neq i}}H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d}\dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d}H_R^2 - \sum_{l<k}\frac{c_l c_k}{\theta^2 R^{2/\nu}}. \qquad (6.161)$$

Then by the condition (6.135) on the constants c_l and the definition (6.136) of $X_1(t)$, the left-hand side of any Einstein equation $(I_i), i > 0$ is

$$\sum_{l \neq i} (\dot{H}_l + H_l^2) + \sum_{\substack{l < k \\ l,k \neq i}} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2X_1^2}$$

$$= \frac{(d-1)}{\nu d} \dot{H}_R + \frac{(d-1)}{2\nu^2 d} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-1)D}{2d\nu R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{(d-1)(d-2)\beta^2}{2e^{2\alpha_1} R^{2/\nu d}}. \quad (6.162)$$

Combining (6.158) and (6.162), we obtain (I_i) for all $i \in \{1, \ldots, d\}$. This proves the theorem.

$\diamond$

C H A P T E R   7

REFORMULATIONS OF A CONFORMAL BIANCHI V

MODEL

We now consider a Bianchi V metric of the form

$$ds^2 = -\left(a_2(t)\cdots a_d(t)\right)^d dt^2 + (a_2(t)\cdots a_d(t))dx_1^2 + a_2^{d-1}(t)e^{2\beta x_1}dx_2^2 +$$

$$\cdots + a_d^{d-1}(t)e^{2\beta x_1}dx_d^2, \tag{7.1}$$

which represents a change of coordinate systems in comparison with Chapter 4. In a $d+1-$dimensional spacetime the nonzero Einstein equations $g^{ij}G_{ij} = -\kappa g^{ij}T_{ij}+\Lambda$, multiplied by $|g_{00}| = (a_2\cdots a_d)^d$ and $\frac{4}{(d-1)}$, are

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + (d+1)\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2d\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$\stackrel{(I_0)}{=} \frac{4\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_2\cdots a_d)^d\left(V\circ\phi + \rho + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right] \tag{7.2}$$

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d}\left(2\dot{H}_l - H_l^2\right) - (d+1)\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2(d-2)\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$\stackrel{(I_1)}{=} \frac{4\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_2\cdots a_d)^d\left(V\circ\phi - p + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right]$$

$$-2\dot{H}_i - \sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + \frac{2d}{(d-1)}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l - (d+1)\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2(d-2)\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$\stackrel{(I_i)}{=} \frac{4\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_2 \cdots a_d)^d \left(V \circ \phi - p + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right]$$

where $H_l(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}_l}{a_l}$ and $i, l, k \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$.

7.1 In terms of a Generalized EMP

Theorem 7.1.1 *Suppose you are given twice differentiable functions $a_2(t), \ldots, a_d(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$ and also functions $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ in (7.2) for some $\Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N} \backslash \{0, 1\}$, and $\kappa \in \mathbb{R} \backslash \{0\}$. Denote*

$$R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (a_2(t) a_3(t) \cdots a_d(t))^\nu \tag{7.3}$$

for some $\nu \neq 0$. If $f(\tau)$ is the inverse of a function $\tau(t)$ which satisfies

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^{q + \frac{d}{2\nu}}, \tag{7.4}$$

for some constants $\theta > 0$ and $q \neq 0$, then

$$Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q \qquad and \qquad Q(\tau) = \frac{2q\nu\kappa}{(d-1)} \varphi'(\tau)^2 \tag{7.5}$$

solve the generalized EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{q\nu(d-2)L}{2\theta^2 Y(\tau)^{\frac{q\nu+d}{q\nu}}} - \frac{2q\nu\beta^2}{\theta^2 Y(\tau)^{(1+q\nu)/q\nu}} - \frac{2q\nu\kappa(\varrho(\tau) + \mathrm{p}(\tau))}{(d-1)\theta^2 Y(\tau)} \tag{7.6}$$

for

$$\varphi(\tau) = \phi(f(\tau)) \tag{7.7}$$

$$\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau)), \ \mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau)). \tag{7.8}$$

$$L \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-2)} \sum_{3 \le l < k \le d} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=3}^{d} \mu_j^2, \tag{7.9}$$

where $\mu_i \in \mathbb{R}$ are such that $a_i(t) = \omega_i e^{\mu_i t} a_2(t)$ for some $\omega_i \in \mathbb{R}, i \in \{3, \ldots, d\}$.

Conversely, suppose you given a twice differentiable function $Y(\tau) > 0$, a continuous function $Q(\tau)$ and also functions $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$ which solve (7.6) for some constants $\theta > 0$ and $q, \nu, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}, L \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0, 1\}$. In order to construct functions which solve $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$, first find $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau)$ which solve the differential equations

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t))^{(2q\nu+d)/2q\nu} \qquad and \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{2q\nu\kappa} Q(\tau). \qquad (7.10)$$

Next find constants $\mu_i, i \in \{3, \ldots, d\}$ which satisfy

$$L = \frac{2}{(d-2)} \sum_{3 \le l < k \le d} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=3}^{d} \mu_j^2, \qquad (7.11)$$

and let

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q}. \qquad (7.12)$$

Then the functions

$$a_2(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu(d-1)} \left(\omega_3 \cdots \omega_d e^{(\mu_3 + \cdots + \mu_d)t}\right)^{-1/(d-1)} \qquad (7.13)$$

$$a_i(t) = \omega_i e^{\mu_i t} a_2(t) \qquad (7.14)$$

$$\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)) \qquad (7.15)$$

$$\rho(t) = \varrho(\tau(t)), \qquad p(t) = \mathrm{p}(\tau(t)) \qquad (7.16)$$

and

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{8\kappa} \left(\frac{d\theta^2}{q^2\nu^2}(Y')^2 + \frac{(d-2)L}{Y^{d/q\nu}} - \frac{4d\beta^2}{Y^{1/q\nu}} \right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2}(\varphi')^2 Y^2 - \varrho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \qquad (7.17)$$

satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ for any $\omega_i > 0, 2 \le i \le d$.

Proof. This proof will implement Theorem 2.1.1 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

Table 11. Theorem 2.1.1 applied to conformal Bianchi V

In Theorem	substitute	In Theorem	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	N	2
δ	$-d/2\nu$	ε	$2\nu\kappa/(d-1)$
$G_0(t)$	constant $\nu(d-2)L/2$	A_0	0
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-2\nu\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t)+p(t))$	A_1	$-d/\nu$
$G_2(t)$	constant $-2\nu\beta^2$	A_2	$-(d-1)/\nu$
$\lambda_0(\tau)$	constant $q\nu(d-2)L/2\theta^2$	B_0	$(d+q\nu)/q\nu$
$\lambda_1(\tau)$	$\frac{-2q\nu\kappa}{\theta^2(d-1)}(\varrho(\tau)+\mathrm{p}(\tau))$	B_1	1
$\lambda_2(\tau)$	constant $-2q\nu\beta^2/\theta^2$	B_2	$(1+q\nu)/q\nu$

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0),\ldots,(I_d)$ in (7.2). Since the right-hand sides of Einstein equations (I_i) are the same for all $i \in \{2,\ldots,d\}$, we begin by equating the left-hand side of (I_2) with the left-hand side of any (I_j) for $j \in \{3,\ldots,d\}$. After dividing by 2, we obtain

$$\dot{H}_j = \dot{H}_2. \tag{7.18}$$

Integrating, we obtain

$$H_j = H_2 + \mu_j \tag{7.19}$$

for $\mu_j \in \mathbb{R}, j \in \{2,\ldots,d\}$ and where $\mu_2 \overset{def.}{=} 0$. Since in general $\frac{d}{dt}\ln(a_i) = \frac{\dot{a}_i}{a_i} = H_i$, (7.19) can be written

$$\frac{d}{dt}\ln(a_j) = \frac{d}{dt}\ln(a_2) + \mu_j. \tag{7.20}$$

Integrating,

$$\ln(a_j) = \ln(a_2) + \mu_j t + c'_j \tag{7.21}$$

for some $c_j \in \mathbb{R}, j \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$ and where $c_1' \stackrel{def.}{=} 0$. Exponentiating and letting $\omega_i \stackrel{def.}{=} e^{c_i} > 0$,

$$a_j(t) = \omega_j e^{\mu_j t} a_2(t), \tag{7.22}$$

where of course this holds trivially for $j = 2$ where $\omega_2 = 1$ and $\mu_2 = 0$.

Forming the linear combination $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ of Einstein's equations,

$$2d \sum_{l=2}^{d}\left(H_l^2 - \dot{H_l}\right) + 2d(d+1)\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 4d\beta^2(a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$= \frac{4d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + (a_2 \cdots a_d)^d(\rho + p)\right]. \tag{7.23}$$

Using the definition (7.3) of $R(t)$, we define

$$\begin{aligned}
H_R &\stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R} \\
&= \frac{\nu(a_2 \cdots a_d(t))^{\nu-1}(\dot{a}_2 \cdots a_d + \cdots + a_2 \cdots \dot{a}_d)}{(a_2 \cdots a_d)^\nu} \\
&= \nu \sum_{j=2}^{d} H_j \\
&= \nu \sum_{j=2}^{d}(H_1 + \mu_j) \\
&= \nu\left((d-1)H_2 + \sum_{j=2}^{d}\mu_j\right),
\end{aligned} \tag{7.24}$$

therefore we have that

$$H_2 = \frac{1}{\nu(d-1)}H_R - \frac{1}{(d-1)}\sum_{j=2}^{d}\mu_j \tag{7.25}$$

and

$$\dot{H}_2 = \frac{1}{\nu(d-1)}\dot{H}_R. \tag{7.26}$$

By equation (7.19) we obtain

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \sum_{l<k}(H_2 + \mu_l)(H_2 + \mu_k) = \sum_{l<k}(H_2^2 + (\mu_l + \mu_k)H_2 + \mu_l\mu_k) \tag{7.27}$$

167

for $l, k \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$. The first term on the right-hand side of (7.27) does not depend on the indices l, k and therefore is equal to H_2^2 times

$$\sum_{l<k} 1 = \sum_{k=3}^{d} \sum_{l=2}^{k-1} 1 = \sum_{k=3}^{d} (k-2) = \sum_{j=1}^{d-2} j = \frac{(d-1)(d-2)}{2}. \tag{7.28}$$

The second term on the right-hand side of (7.27) sums to H_2 times

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l<k} (\mu_l + \mu_k) &= \sum_{l=2}^{d-1} \sum_{k=l+1}^{d} \mu_l + \sum_{k=3}^{d} \sum_{l=2}^{k-1} \mu_k \\
&= \sum_{l=2}^{d-1} (d-l)\mu_l + \sum_{k=3}^{d} (k-2)\mu_k \\
&= (d-2)\mu_2 + \sum_{j=3}^{d-1} (d-j+j-2)\mu_j + (d-2)\mu_d \\
&= (d-2) \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j. \tag{7.29}
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore (7.27) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)(d-2)}{2} H_2^2 + (d-2) H_2 \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j + \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k. \tag{7.30}$$

By (7.25) and (7.26), we also have that

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-1)(d-2)}{2} \left(\frac{1}{\nu(d-1)} H_R - \frac{1}{(d-1)} \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j \right)^2 \tag{7.31}$$

$$+ (d-2) \left(\frac{1}{\nu(d-1)} H_R - \frac{1}{(d-1)} \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j \right) \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j + \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k.$$

Collecting terms (the H_R terms sums to zero),

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-2)}{2\nu^2(d-1)} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-2)}{2(d-1)} \left(\sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j \right)^2 + \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k. \tag{7.32}$$

Also we have that

$$\left(\sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j \right)^2 = 2 \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k + \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j^2 \tag{7.33}$$

168

for $l, k \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$ therefore (7.32) becomes

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-2)}{2\nu^2(d-1)}H_R^2 + \frac{1}{(d-1)}\sum_{l<k}\mu_l\mu_k - \frac{(d-2)}{2(d-1)}\sum_{j=2}^{d}\mu_j^2. \tag{7.34}$$

Defining the quantity

$$L \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-2)}\sum_{l<k}\mu_l\mu_k - \sum_{j=2}^{d}\mu_j^2$$

$$= \frac{2}{(d-2)}\sum_{3\leq l<k\leq d}\mu_l\mu_k - \sum_{j=3}^{d}\mu_j^2 \quad (\text{since } \mu_2 = 0), \tag{7.35}$$

we can now rewrite equation (7.34) to say that

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-2)}{2\nu^2(d-1)}H_R^2 + \frac{(d-2)}{2(d-1)}L. \tag{7.36}$$

Similarly by (7.18), (7.19), (7.25), (7.26), (7.33) and (7.35), we have that

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l &= \sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_2 \\
&= (d-1)\dot{H}_2 \\
&= \frac{1}{\nu}\dot{H}_R
\end{aligned} \tag{7.37}$$

and also

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l^2 &= \sum_{l=2}^{d}(H_2 + \mu_l)^2 \\
&= (d-1)H_2^2 + 2H_2\sum_{l=2}^{d}\mu_l + \sum_{l=2}^{d}\mu_l^2 \\
&= \frac{1}{(d-1)}\left(\frac{1}{\nu}H_R - \sum_{j=2}^{d}\mu_j\right)^2 + \frac{2}{(d-1)}\left(\frac{1}{\nu}H_R - \sum_{j=2}^{d}\mu_j\right)\sum_{l=2}^{d}\mu_l + \sum_{l=2}^{d}\mu_l^2 \\
&= \frac{1}{\nu^2(d-1)}H_R^2 - \frac{1}{(d-1)}\left(\sum_{j=2}^{d}\mu_j\right)^2 + \sum_{l=2}^{d}\mu_l^2 \\
&= \frac{1}{\nu^2(d-1)}H_R^2 - \frac{2}{(d-1)}\sum_{l<k}\mu_l\mu_k + \frac{(d-2)}{(d-1)}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\mu_l^2 \\
&= \frac{1}{\nu^2(d-1)}H_R^2 - \frac{(d-2)}{(d-1)}L.
\end{aligned}$$

$$\tag{7.38}$$

That is, the linear combination $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ of Einstein equations in (7.23) can be written in terms of R and H_R by using (5.35), (7.37) and (7.38) so that we obtain

$$\frac{d^2}{\nu^2}H_R^2 + d(d-2)L - \frac{2d}{\nu}\dot{H}_R - 4d\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} = \frac{4d\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + R^{d/\nu}(\rho + p)\right]. \quad (7.39)$$

Multiplying by $-\frac{\nu}{2d}$,

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu}H_R^2 - \frac{\nu(d-2)}{2}L + 2\nu\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} = \frac{-2\nu\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + R^{d/\nu}(\rho + p)\right]. \quad (7.40)$$

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Theorem 2.1.1, applied with constants $\epsilon, \varepsilon, N, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 11. Since $\tau(t), Y(\tau), Q(\tau)$ and $\varphi(\tau)$ defined in (7.4), (7.5) and (7.7) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Theorem 2.1.1, by this theorem and by definition (7.8) of $\varrho(\tau), \mathrm{p}(\tau)$, the generalized EMP equation (2.2) holds for constants $B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 11. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the generalized EMP equation (7.6) and we begin by showing that (I_0) is satisfied. Differentiating the definition of $R(t)$ in (7.12) and using the definition in (7.10) of $\tau(t)$,

$$\dot{R}(t) = \frac{1}{q}Y(\tau(t))^{\frac{1}{q}-1}Y'(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t) \quad (7.41)$$

$$= \frac{\theta}{q}Y(\tau(t))^{\frac{1}{q}(1+d/2\nu)}Y'(\tau(t)) \quad (7.42)$$

Dividing by $R(t)$,

$$H_R(t) \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)} = \frac{\theta}{q}Y(\tau(t))^{d/2q\nu}Y'(\tau(t)). \quad (7.43)$$

Differentiating the definition (7.15) of $\phi(t)$ and using definition (7.10) of $\tau(t)$,

$$\dot{\phi}(t) = \varphi'(\tau(t))\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta\varphi'(\tau(t))Y(\tau(t))^{1+d/2q\nu}. \quad (7.44)$$

170

Using (7.43) and (7.44), and also the definitions (7.12) and (7.16) of $R(t)$ and $\rho(t)$ respectively, the definition (7.17) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{R^{d/\nu}} \left[\frac{(d-1)}{4\kappa} \left(\frac{d}{2\nu^2} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-2)}{2} L - 2d\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} \right) - \frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} \right] - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}.$$
(7.45)

The quantity in the inner parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, we differentiate the definitions in (7.13) and (7.14) of $a_i(t)$, divide the results by $a_i(t)$, and use the definition (7.43) of H_R to obtain

$$H_2 \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}_2}{a_2} = \frac{1}{\nu(d-1)} H_R - \frac{1}{(d-1)}(\mu_3 + \cdots + \mu_d)$$
(7.46)

and

$$H_i \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{a}_i}{a_i} = \frac{\dot{a}_2}{a_2} + \mu_i = H_2 + \mu_i$$
(7.47)

for $i \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$ by taking $\mu_2 \stackrel{def.}{=} 0$. Therefore we obtain

$$\dot{H}_i = \dot{H}_2 = \frac{1}{\nu(d-1)} \dot{H}_R.$$
(7.48)

This confirms that the identities (7.18), (7.19), (7.25) and (7.26) hold in the converse direction, so that the computations (7.27)-(7.38) are also valid in the converse direction for L in (7.11). That is,

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-2)}{2\nu^2(d-1)} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-2)}{2(d-1)} L$$
(7.49)

and

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 = \frac{1}{\nu^2(d-1)} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-2)}{(d-1)} L$$
(7.50)

which shows that the left-hand side of (I_0) is equal to

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + (d+1) \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2d\beta^2 (a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$= \frac{d}{2\nu^2} H_R^2 + \frac{(d-2)}{2} L - 2d\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu}$$
(7.51)

(7.52)

171

therefore (7.102) can be written $V \circ \phi =$

$$\frac{1}{R^{2/\nu}} \left[\frac{(d-1)}{4\kappa} \left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + (d+1) \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2d\beta^2 (a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1} \right) - \frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} \right] - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}$$

(7.53)

so that (I_0) holds.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Theorem 2.1.1 holds, applied with constants $N, B_0, \ldots, B_N$ and functions $\lambda_0(\tau), \ldots, \lambda_N(\tau)$ as indicated in Table 6. Since $\tau(t), \varphi(\tau), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (7.10), (7.12) and (7.15) are consistent with the converse implication of Theorem 2.1.1, applied with $a(t), \delta$ and ε as in Table 11, by this theorem and by the definition (7.16) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.1) holds for constants $\delta, \varepsilon, A_0, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G_0(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 11. That is, we have regained equation (7.40). Now solving (7.45) for $R^{d/\nu}\rho(t)$ and substituting this into (7.40), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu} H_R^2 - \frac{\nu(d-2)}{2} L + 2\nu\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} = \frac{-2\nu\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + \frac{(d-1)}{4\kappa} \left(\frac{d}{2\nu^2} H_R^2 \right. \right.$$

$$\left. \left. + \frac{(d-2)}{2} L - 2d\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} \right) + R^{d/\nu} \left(-V \circ \phi + p - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right].$$

(7.54)

Collecting terms, multiplying the equation times $\frac{2}{\nu}$, and using that by definitions (7.13) and (7.14) of $a_2, \ldots, a_d$ we have that $R = (a_2 \cdots a_d)^\nu$,

$$\frac{2}{\nu} \dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu^2} H_R^2 - \frac{(d-2)}{2} L - 2(d-2)\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu}$$

$$= \frac{-4\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_2 \cdots a_d)^d \left(-V \circ \phi + p - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right) \right].$$

(7.55)

The left-hand side of this equation is in fact equal to the left-hand side of each of the Einstein equations (I_1) and (I_i) for $i \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$. To see this, we use (7.48)-(7.50) to obtain

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} \left(2\dot{H}_l - H_l^2 \right) - (d+1) \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2(d-2)\beta^2 (a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

172

$$= \frac{2}{\nu}\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu^2}H_R^2 - \frac{(d-2)}{2}L - 2(d-2)\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} \qquad (7.56)$$

and

$$-2\dot{H}_i - \sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + \frac{2d}{(d-1)}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l - (d+1)\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k - 2(d-2)\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$= \frac{2}{\nu}\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu^2}H_R^2 - \frac{(d-2)}{2}L - 2(d-2)\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} \qquad (7.57)$$

for $i \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$. By (7.56) and (7.55) equation (I_1) holds, and by (7.57) and (7.55) equation (I_i) holds for $i \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$. This proves the theorem. $\qquad \diamond$

7.1.1 Reduction to generalized EMP with classical term

We take $\rho = p = 0$ and choose parameter $q = 1/2\nu$ in Theorem 7.1.1 to find that solving the Bianchi V Einstein equations

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + (d+1)\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k - 2d\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$\stackrel{(I_0)'}{=} \frac{4\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_2\cdots a_d)^d\left(V\circ\phi + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right] \qquad (7.58)$$

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d}\left(2\dot{H}_l - H_l^2\right) - (d+1)\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k - 2(d-2)\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$\stackrel{(I_1)'}{=} \frac{4\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_2\cdots a_d)^d\left(V\circ\phi + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right]$$

$$-2\dot{H}_i - \sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l^2 + \frac{2d}{(d-1)}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l - (d+1)\sum_{l<k}H_lH_k - 2(d-2)\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$\stackrel{(I_i)'}{=} \frac{4\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[-\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + (a_2\cdots a_d)^d\left(V\circ\phi + \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right]$$

is equivalent to solving the classical EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{(d-2)L}{4\theta^2 Y(\tau)^{1+2d}} - \frac{\beta^2}{\theta^2 Y(\tau)^3} \qquad (7.59)$$

for constants $\theta, L > 0$ and $\beta \in \mathbb{R}$. The solutions of $(I_0)', (I_1)', \ldots, (I_d)'$ in (7.58) and of (7.59) are related by

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{2\nu} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \varphi'(\tau)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{\kappa} Q(\tau) \qquad (7.60)$$

for $q \neq 0, \phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t)), R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (a_2(t) \cdots a_d(t))^{2\nu}$ and

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^{(d+1)/2\nu} = \theta Y(\tau(t))^{d+1}, \qquad (7.61)$$

for any $\theta > 0$. Also the constant

$$L \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-2)} \sum_{3 \leq l < k \leq d} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=3}^{d} \mu_j^2, \qquad (7.62)$$

where $\mu_i \in \mathbb{R}$ are such that $a_i(t) = \omega_i e^{\mu_i t} a_2(t)$ for some $c_i \in \mathbb{R}, i \in \{3, \ldots, d\}$. In the converse direction

$$a_2(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu(d-1)} (\omega_3 \cdots \omega_d e^{(\mu_3 + \cdots + \mu_d)t})^{-1/(d-1)} \qquad (7.63)$$

and

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{(d-1)}{8\kappa} \left(4d\theta^2 (Y')^2 + \frac{(d-2)L}{Y^{2d}} - \frac{4d\beta^2}{Y^2} \right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2} (\varphi')^2 Y^2 - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \right] \circ \tau(t) \qquad (7.64)$$

Example 42 *For $d = 3$, $\theta = \beta = \nu = 1$ and $L = -12$, (7.59) becomes $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -3/Y(\tau)^7 - 1/Y(\tau)^3$. We take the solution $Y(\tau) = (4\tau^2 - 1)^{1/4}$ in equation (D.3) and refer to (D.61) - (D.63) to obtain solution $\tau(t) = \frac{-1}{2}\coth(2(t - t_0))$ of the differential equation $\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t))^4 = 4\tau(t)^2 - 1$. Therefore by (D.63) we have*

$$\begin{aligned} R(t) &= Y(\tau(t))^2 \\ &= csch(2(t - t_0)) \end{aligned} \qquad (7.65)$$

174

for $t > t_0$, and

$$a_2(t) = R(t)^{1/2}e^{-\sqrt{3}t} = \sqrt{csch(2(t-t_0))}e^{-\sqrt{3}t}$$

$$a_3(t) = e^{2\sqrt{3}t}a_2(t) = \sqrt{csch(2(t-t_0))}e^{\sqrt{3}t} \tag{7.66}$$

where we have taken $\mu_3 = 2\sqrt{3}$ so that $L = -12 = -\mu_3^2$. Since $Q(\tau) = 0 = \varphi'(\tau)$,

$$\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \phi_0 \tag{7.67}$$

for constant $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and by (7.64), (D.63), (D.64)

$$
\begin{aligned}
V(\phi(t)) &= \left[\frac{3}{\kappa}\left((Y')^2 - \frac{1}{Y^6} - \frac{1}{Y^2}\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ \tau(t) \\
&= \frac{3}{\kappa}sinh(2(t-t_0))\left(cosh^2(2(t-t_0)) - sinh^2(2(t-t_0)) - 1\right) - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \\
&= -\frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{7.68}
\end{aligned}
$$

That is, we obtain a vacuum solution.

7.1.2   Another Bianchi V metric

Although it is not included as a special case of the above metric (7.1), we will additionally consider the metric $ds^2 = -X(t)Y(t)dt^2 + X(t)Y(t)dx^2 + X(t)^2e^{\beta x}dy^2 + Y(t)^2e^{\beta x}dz^2$ for $X(t), Y(t) > 0$ with the energy-momentum tensor $T_{ij} = T_{ij}^{(1)}$ to be that of a minimally coupled scalar field ϕ with a potential V as in (1.5). This will show how the methodology developed in this thesis can be applied to this additional form of the Bianchi V metric. The Einstein equations $g^{ij}G_{ij} = -\kappa g^{ij}T_{ij} + \Lambda$, multiplied by $2|g_{00}| = 2XY$, in this case are

$$H_X^2 + H_Y^2 + 4H_XH_Y - \frac{3}{2}\beta^2 \overset{(I_0)'}{=} \kappa\left[\dot{\phi}^2 + 2XYV \circ \phi\right]$$

$$2\dot{H}_X + H_X^2 + 2\dot{H}_Y + H_Y^2 - \frac{1}{2}\beta^2 \overset{(I_1)'}{=} \kappa\left[-\dot{\phi}^2 + 2XYV \circ \phi\right]$$

$$\dot{H}_X + 3\dot{H}_Y + 2H_Y^2 - \frac{1}{2}\beta^2 \overset{(I_2)'}{=} \kappa\left[-\dot{\phi}^2 + 2XYV \circ \phi\right]$$

$$\dot{H}_Y + 3\dot{H}_X + 2H_X^2 - \frac{1}{2}\beta^2 \overset{(I_3)'}{=} \kappa\left[-\dot{\phi}^2 + 2XYV \circ \phi\right]$$

where as usual $H_X(t) = \dot{X}(t)/X(t)$ and $H_Y(t) = \dot{Y}(t)/Y(t)$. Forming the linear combination $3(I_0)' - (I_1)' - (I_2)' - (I_3)'$ and dividing by 6, we obtain

$$2H_X H_Y - \frac{1}{2}\beta^2 - \dot{H}_X - \dot{H}_Y = \kappa\dot{\phi}^2. \qquad (7.69)$$

Equating the left sides of (I_1), (I_2) we obtain $\dot{\eta} + \frac{1}{\nu}\eta H_R = 0$ for $\eta(t) \overset{def.}{=} H_X(t) - H_Y(t)$, $R(t) \overset{def.}{=} (X(t)Y(t))^\nu$ for some $\nu \neq 0$, and $H_R(t) = \dot{R}(t)/R(t)$. By Lemma A.1 with $\mu = 1/\nu \neq 0$ this shows that ηXY is a constant function. Setting $D = \frac{\nu}{2}\eta^2 X^2 Y^2$ and writing (7.69) in terms of R, we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{1}{2\nu}H_R^2 + \nu\kappa\dot{\phi}^2 = -\frac{D}{R^{2/\nu}} - \frac{\beta^2\nu}{2}. \qquad (7.70)$$

Next we apply Theorem 2.1.1 with substitutions made according to the following table.

Table 12. Theorem 2.1.1 applied to a third Bianchi V

In Theorem	substitute	In Theorem	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	N	2
δ	$-\frac{1}{2\nu}$	ε	$\nu\kappa$
G_0	$-D$	A_0	$2/\nu$
G_1	$-\beta^2\nu/2$	A_1	0
λ_0	$-qD/\theta^2$	B_0	$(3 + q\nu)/q\nu$
λ_1	$-\beta^2\nu q/2\theta^2$	B_1	$(q\nu + 1)/q\nu$

By Theorem 2.1.1 we obtain the generalized EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{-qD}{\theta^2 Y(\tau)^{(3+q\nu)/q\nu}} - \frac{\beta^2 \nu q}{2\theta^2 Y(\tau)^{(q\nu+1)/q\nu}} \tag{7.71}$$

for $Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q$, $q \neq 0$ and $Q(\tau) = q\nu\kappa\varphi'(\tau)^2$ where $f(\tau)$ is the inverse of $\tau(t)$ satisfying $\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta R(t)^{(2q\nu+1)/2\nu}$ and $\varphi(\tau) = \phi(f(\tau))$. Conversely, given a solution $Y(\tau) > 0, Q(\tau)$ to (7.71) one solves for $\tau(t)$ and $\sigma(t)$ in the equations $\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t))^{(2\nu q+1)/2\nu q}$ and $\dot{\sigma}(t) = 1/\dot{\tau}(t)^{2/(2q\nu+1)}$ for some $\theta > 0$. Also in the converse direction we define $\phi(t) = \varphi(\tau(t))$, $R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{1/q}$, $X(t) = R(t)^{1/2\nu}e^{c\sigma(t)}$, $Y(t) = R(t)^{1/2\nu}e^{-c\sigma(t)}$ for a constant c such that $c^2 = D\theta^{2/(1+2q\nu)}/2\nu$, and the potential

$$V(\phi(t)) = \left[\frac{1}{\kappa} \left(\frac{3\theta^2}{4\nu^2 q^2}(Y')^2 - \frac{D}{2\nu Y^{3/q\nu}} - \frac{3\beta^2}{4Y^{1/q\nu}} \right) - \frac{\theta^2}{2}Y^2(\varphi')^2 \right] \circ \tau(t). \tag{7.72}$$

Taking $\nu = 1, q = 1/2, D = 6$ and $\beta = -2$, (7.71) becomes $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = -3/Y(\tau)^7 - 1/Y(\tau)^3$. We take solution $Y(\tau) = \left(\frac{4}{\theta^2}\tau^2 - 1 \right)^{1/4}$ and use (D.66)-(D.67) to obtain the solution $\tau(t) = \frac{\theta}{2}\cosh(2(t - t_0))$ of the differential equation $\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t))^2$. We also solve for $\dot{\sigma}(t) = 1/\dot{\tau}(t)$ to obtain $\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{2\theta}\ln(tanh(t - t_0))$. Therefore by (D.67) we have

$$R(t) = Y(\tau(t))^2 = sinh(2(t - t_0)) \tag{7.73}$$

for $t > t_0$, and

$$X(t)^2 = R(t)e^{2\sqrt{3\theta}\sigma(t)} = \sinh(2(t - t_0))tanh^{\sqrt{3}/\sqrt{\theta}}(t - t_0) \tag{7.74}$$

$$Y(t)^2 = R(t)e^{-2\sqrt{3\theta}\sigma(t)} = \sinh(2(t - t_0))tanh^{-\sqrt{3}/\sqrt{\theta}}(t - t_0). \tag{7.75}$$

Since $Q(\tau) = 0$, $\phi(t) = \phi_0$ is constant and by (7.72), (D.67) and (D.68),

$$V(\phi(t)) \ = \ 0. \tag{7.76}$$

By identifying $X(t)^2, Y(t)^2$ and $X(t)Y(t)$ here with $A_1(t), A_2(t)$ and $A_3(t)$ in [19], we obtain the Joseph vacuum solution with the constants $k_1 = k_2 = k_3 = 1$.

7.2   In terms of a Schrödinger-Type Equation

To reformulate Einstein's field equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ in (7.2) in terms of an equation with one less non-linear term than that which is provided by the generalized EMP formulation, one can apply Corollary 2.3.2 to the difference $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ (and similar to above, define $V \circ \phi$ in $u-$notation to be such that (I_0) holds). Below is the resulting statement.

Theorem 7.2.1 *Suppose you are given twice differentiable functions $a_2(t), \ldots, a_d(t) > 0$, a once differentiable function $\phi(t)$, and also functions $\rho(t), p(t), V(x)$ which satisfy the Einstein equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ for some $\Lambda \in \mathbb{R}, d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0,1\}, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$. Denote*

$$R(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} (a_2(t) \cdots a_d(t))^{\nu} \tag{7.77}$$

for some $\nu \neq 0$, then the functions

$$u(\sigma) = R(\sigma + t_0)^{-d/2\nu} \tag{7.78}$$

$$P(\sigma) = \frac{d\kappa}{(d-1)}\psi'(\sigma)^2 \tag{7.79}$$

solve the Schrödinger-type equation

$$u''(\sigma) + [E - P(\sigma)]\, u(\sigma) = \frac{d\beta^2}{u^{(d-2)/d}} + \frac{d\kappa(\rho(\sigma) + \mathrm{p}(\sigma))}{(d-1)u(\sigma)} \tag{7.80}$$

for

$$\psi(\sigma) = \phi(\sigma + t_0) \tag{7.81}$$

$$\rho(\sigma) = \rho(\sigma + t_0), \; \mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(\sigma + t_0). \tag{7.82}$$

and where

$$E \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{d(d-2)}{4}\left(\frac{2}{(d-2)}\sum_{l<k}\mu_l\mu_k - \sum_{j=3}^{d}\mu_j^2\right) \tag{7.83}$$

178

for constants μ_j such that $a_j(t) = \omega_j e^{\mu_j t} a_2(t)$ for some $\omega_j > 0, j \in \{2, \ldots, d\}$.

Conversely, suppose you are given a twice differentiable function $u(\sigma) > 0$, and also functions $P(\sigma)$ and $\rho(\sigma), p(\sigma)$ which solve (7.80) for some constants $E < 0, \kappa \in \mathbb{R}\backslash\{0\}$ and $d \in \mathbb{N}\backslash\{0,1\}$. In order to construct functions which solve $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$, If $\psi(\sigma)$ is such that

$$\psi'(\sigma)^2 = \frac{(d-1)}{d\kappa}P(\sigma),\tag{7.84}$$

constants $\mu_i, i \in \{3, \ldots, d\}$ satisfy

$$E = \frac{d(d-2)}{4}\left(\frac{2}{(d-2)}\sum_{l<k}\mu_l\mu_k - \sum_{j=3}^{d}\mu_j^2\right),\tag{7.85}$$

and

$$R(t) = u(t-t_0)^{-2\nu/d}.\tag{7.86}$$

Then the functions

$$a_2(t) = R(t)^{1/\nu(d-1)}\left(\omega_3\cdots\omega_d e^{(\mu_2+\cdots+\mu_d)t}\right)^{-1/(d-1)}\tag{7.87}$$

$$a_i(t) = \omega_i e^{\mu_i t} a_2(t)\tag{7.88}$$

$$\phi(t) = \psi(t-t_0)\tag{7.89}$$

$$\rho(t) = \rho(t-t_0), \qquad\qquad p(t) = p(t-t_0)\tag{7.90}$$

and

$V(\phi(t))$

$$= \left[\frac{(d-1)}{2\kappa}\left(\frac{1}{d}(u')^2 + u^2\frac{E}{d} - d\beta^2 u^{2/d}\right) - \frac{1}{2}(\psi')^2 u^2 - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right] \circ (t-t_0)\tag{7.91}$$

satisfy the equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ for any $\omega_i > 0, 2 \leq i \leq d$.

Proof. This proof will implement Corollary 2.3.2 with constants and functions as indicated in the following table.

179

Table 13. Corollary 2.3.2 applied to conformal Bianchi V

In Corollary	substitute	In Corollary	substitute
$a(t)$	$R(t)$	N	2
δ	$-d/2\nu$	ε	$2\nu\kappa/(d-1)$
$G(t)$	constant $2\nu E/d$	A	0
$G_1(t)$	$\frac{-2\nu\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(t)+p(t))$	A_1	$-d/\nu$
$G_2(t)$	constant $-2\nu\beta^2$	A_2	$-(d-1)/\nu$
$F_1(\sigma)$	$\frac{d\kappa}{(d-1)}(\rho(\sigma)+p(\sigma))$	C_1	1
$F_2(\sigma)$	constant $d\beta^2$	C_2	$(d-2)/d$

Much of this proof will rely on computations that are exactly the same as those seen in the proof of Theorem 7.1.1 (the generalized EMP formulation of conformally Bianchi V). Therefore we will restate the relevant results here, but point the reader to the details in the proof of Theorem 7.1.1.

To prove the forward implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Einstein field equations $(I_0),\ldots,(I_d)$. Since the right-hand sides of Einstein equation (I_i) are all the same for $i \in \{1,\ldots,d\}$, we begin by equating the left-hand side of (I_2) with the left-hand side of any (I_j) for $j \in \{2,\ldots,d\}$ since it will give us a simplifying relation among the scale factors $a_2(t),\ldots,a_d(t)$. Exactly this was done in (7.18)-(7.22) so that again we obtain

$$H_j = H_2 + \mu_j \tag{7.92}$$

and

$$a_j(t) = \omega_j e^{\mu_j t} a_2(t) \tag{7.93}$$

for $\omega_j > 0, \mu_j \in \mathbb{R}, j \in \{2,\ldots,d\}$, and $\mu_2 = 0, \omega_2 = 1$. Following the arguments given in (7.23)-(7.40), we form the linear combination $d(I_0) - \sum_{i=1}^{d}(I_i)$ and write

everything in terms of $R = (a_2 \cdots a_d)^\nu$ as defined in (7.77) to obtain

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu} H_R^2 - \frac{2\nu}{d} E + 2\nu\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} = \frac{-2\nu\kappa}{(d-1)} \left[\dot{\phi}^2 + R^{d/\nu}(\rho + p) \right]. \qquad (7.94)$$

Since

$$L \overset{def.}{=} \frac{2}{(d-2)} \sum_{l<k} \mu_l \mu_k - \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j^2 \;\Rightarrow\; \frac{\nu(d-2)}{2} L = \frac{2\nu}{d} E \; \text{(by (7.83))} \qquad (7.95)$$

and

$$H_R \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R}, \qquad (7.96)$$

we again have that

$$H_2 = \frac{1}{\nu(d-1)} H_R - \frac{1}{(d-1)} \sum_{j=2}^{d} \mu_j \qquad (7.97)$$

$$\dot{H}_2 = \frac{1}{\nu(d-1)} \dot{H}_R. \qquad (7.98)$$

This shows that $R(t), \phi(t), \rho(t)$ and $p(t)$ satisfy the hypothesis of Corollary 2.3.2, applied with constants $\epsilon, \varepsilon, N, A, A_1 \ldots, A_N$ and functions $a(t), G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 13. Since $u(\sigma), P(\sigma)$ and $\psi(\sigma)$ defined in (7.78)-(7.79) and (7.81) are equivalent to that in the forward implication of Corollary 2.3.1, by this corollary and by definition (7.82) of $\rho(\sigma), p(\sigma)$, the Schrödinger-type equation (2.130) holds for constants $C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 13. This proves the forward implication.

To prove the converse implication, we assume to be given functions which solve the Schrödinger-type equation (7.80) and we will show that equations $(I_0), \ldots, (I_d)$ are satisfied. To show that (I_0) is satisfied, we differentiate the definition of $R(t)$ in (7.86) to obtain

$$\dot{R}(t) = -\frac{2\nu}{d} u(t - t_0)^{-2\nu/d-1} u'(t - t_0). \qquad (7.99)$$

Dividing by $R(t)$,

$$H_R \overset{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}}{R} = -\frac{2\nu}{d} \frac{u'(t - t_0)}{u(t - t_0)}. \qquad (7.100)$$

181

Differentiating the definition (7.89) of $\phi(t)$

$$\dot{\phi}(t) = \psi'(t - t_0). \tag{7.101}$$

Using (7.100) and (7.101), and also the definitions (7.86) and (7.90) of $R(t)$ and $\rho(t)$ respectively, the definition (5.70) of $V \circ \phi$ can be written as

$$V \circ \phi = \frac{1}{R^{d/\nu}} \left[\frac{(d-1)}{4\kappa} \left(\frac{d}{2\nu^2} H_R^2 + \frac{2}{d} E - 2d\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} \right) - \frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} \right] - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}. \tag{7.102}$$

The quantity in parenthesis here is in fact equal to the left-hand-side of equation (I_0). To see this, note that the definitions of $a_2(t), a_i(t)$ in (7.87), (7.88) and also $H_R \overset{def.}{=} \dot{R}/R$ are the same as those in Theorem 7.1.1. Therefore we may follow the arguments given in (7.24)-(7.38) to see that the identities

$$\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k = \frac{(d-2)}{2\nu^2(d-1)} H_R^2 + \frac{2}{d(d-1)} E, \tag{7.103}$$

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} \dot{H}_l = \frac{1}{\nu} \dot{H}_R$$

and

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 = \frac{1}{\nu^2(d-1)} H_R^2 - \frac{4}{d(d-1)} E \tag{7.104}$$

hold in the converse direction (since (7.11) in Theorem 7.1.1 and (7.85) here show that $L = 4E/d(d-2)$). This shows that the left-hand side of (I_0) is equal to

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + (d+1) \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2d\beta^2 (a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$= \frac{d}{2\nu^2} H_R^2 + \frac{2}{d} E - 2d\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} \tag{7.105}$$

and therefore (7.102) can be written as $V \circ \phi =$

$$\frac{1}{R^{d/\nu}} \left[\frac{(d-1)}{4\kappa} \left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + (d+1) \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2d\beta^2 (a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1} \right) - \frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} \right] - \rho - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa} \tag{7.106}$$

182

which shows that (I_0) holds in the converse direction.

To conclude the proof we must also show that the equations $(I_1), \ldots, (I_d)$ hold. In the converse direction the hypothesis of the converse of Corollary 2.3.2 holds, applied with constants $N, C_1, \ldots, C_N$ and functions $F_1(\sigma), \ldots, F_N(\sigma)$ as indicated in Table 13. Since $\psi(\sigma), R(t)$ and $\phi(t)$ defined in (7.84), (7.86) and (7.89) are consistent with the converse implication of Corollary 2.3.2, applied with $a(t)$ and δ, ε as in Table 13, by this corollary and by the definition (7.90) of $\rho(t), p(t)$ the scale factor equation (2.125) holds for constants $\delta, \varepsilon, A, A_1, \ldots, A_N$ and functions $G(t), G_1(t), \ldots, G_N(t)$ according to Table 13. That is, we have regained (7.94). Now solving (7.102) for $R^{d/\nu}\rho(t)$ and substituting this into (7.94), we obtain

$$\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu}H_R^2 - \frac{2\nu}{d}E + 2\nu\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} = \frac{-2\nu\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + R^{d/\nu}\left(-V \circ \phi + p - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right.$$

$$\left. + \frac{(d-1)}{4\kappa}\left(\frac{d}{2\nu^2}H_R^2 + \frac{2}{d}E - 2d\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu}\right)\right]. \tag{7.107}$$

Simplifying and multiplying by $2/\nu$,

$$\frac{2}{\nu}\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu^2}H_R^2 - \frac{2}{d}E - 2(d-2)\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu}$$

$$= \frac{-4\kappa}{(d-1)}\left[\frac{\dot{\phi}^2}{2} + R^{d/\nu}\left(-V \circ \phi + p - \frac{\Lambda}{\kappa}\right)\right]. \tag{7.108}$$

As noted above, the computations (7.30)-(7.38) from Theorem 7.1.1 still hold in this theorem, in the converse direction. Therefore by (7.103)-(7.104) the left-hand side of (I_1) is equal to

$$\sum_{l=2}^{d}\left(2\dot{H}_l - H_l^2\right) - (d+1)\sum_{l<k}H_l H_k - 2(d-2)\beta^2(a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$= \frac{2}{\nu}\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu^2}H_R^2 - \frac{2}{d}E - 2(d-2)\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} \tag{7.109}$$

183

and the left-hand side of (I_i) is equal to

$$-2\dot{H}_i-\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2+\frac{2d}{(d-1)}\sum_{l=2}^{d} \dot{H}_l-(d+1)\sum_{l<k} H_l H_k-2(d-2)\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}$$

$$= \frac{2}{\nu}\dot{H}_R - \frac{d}{2\nu^2}H_R^2 - \frac{2}{d}E - 2(d-2)\beta^2 R^{(d-1)/\nu} \qquad (7.110)$$

for $i \in \{2,\ldots,d\}$. By (7.108), (7.109) and (7.110), (I_i) hold in the converse direction

for $i \in \{1,\ldots,d\}$. This proves the theorem. $\qquad \diamond$

A P P E N D I X   A

A SHORT LEMMA

Lemma A.1 *For any differentiable function $f(t)$, any positive differentiable function $R(t)$, and constant $\mu \in \mathbb{R}$,*

$$f(t)R(t)^{\mu} \text{ is a constant} \tag{A.1}$$

if and only if

$$\dot{f}(t) + \mu f(t)H(t) = 0 \tag{A.2}$$

where $H(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\dot{R}(t)}{R(t)}$.

Proof. $f(t)R(t)^{\mu}$ is a constant function if and only if

$$\frac{d}{dt}\left(f(t)R(t)^{\mu}\right) = 0. \tag{A.3}$$

Or equivalently,

$$\dot{f}(t)R(t)^{\mu} + \mu f(t)R(t)^{\mu-1}\dot{R}(t) = 0. \tag{A.4}$$

Since $R(t)$ is positive, (A.4) holds if and only if the same equation divided by $R(t)^{\mu}$ holds. That is,

$$\dot{f}(t) + \mu f(t)H(t) = 0. \tag{A.5}$$

$\diamond$

APPENDIX B

THE EINSTEIN TENSOR IN $d + 1$ DIMENSIONS

In this thesis we consider a number of different metrics on pseudo-Riemannian spacetime manifolds of arbitrary dimension. For a fixed dimension, one can use a computer program, like Mathematica or Maple, to compute the Einstein tensor $G_{ij} \overset{def.}{=} R_{ij} - \frac{1}{2}Rg_{ij}$ in terms of the Ricci tensor R_{ij} and the scalar curvature R. However on a space of arbitrary dimension, the use of computer programs involves a bit of guesswork (to the best of the author's knowledge) since one must choose a few fixed dimensions in which to compute G_{ij}, then deduce a more general form for G_{ij} for arbitrary dimension, and in all cases computing power will limit the ability to check one's formula for very high dimension.

We will show a by-hand method for computing G_{ij} on a manifold of arbitrary dimension, which is manageable to apply at least when the metric is diagonal with coefficient functions that depend only on a few of the coordinate variables. As an example, we will use the conformal Bianchi V metric

$$ds^2 = -(a_2 \cdots a_d)^d dt^2 + (a_2 \cdots a_d)dx_1^2 + a_2^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}dx_2^2 + \cdots + a_d^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}dx_d^2 \quad \text{(B.1)}$$

for $a_i = a_i(t), \beta \neq 0$, and $i, j \in \{0, 1, \ldots, d\}$, as in Chapter 7.

We will compute the Ricci tensor in three pieces, each computed directly from

Christoffel symbols of the second kind Γ_{ij}^k, by

$$R_{ij} = R_{ij}^{(1)} + R_{ij}^{(2)} - R_{ij}^{(3)} \tag{B.2}$$

for

$$R_{ij}^{(1)} \overset{def.}{=} \sum_{k=0}^{d} \left(\Gamma_{kj,i}^k - \Gamma_{ij,k}^k \right), \tag{B.3}$$

$$R_{ij}^{(2)} \overset{def.}{=} \sum_{m=0}^{d} \sum_{n=0}^{d} \Gamma_{im}^n \Gamma_{nj}^m, \tag{B.4}$$

and

$$R_{ij}^{(3)} \overset{def.}{=} \sum_{m=0}^{d} \sum_{n=0}^{d} \Gamma_{ij}^m \Gamma_{nm}^n \tag{B.5}$$

where $, i$ denotes differentiation $\frac{\partial}{\partial x_i}$ with respect to x_i. Γ_{ij}^k are given in terms of the metric components by

$$\Gamma_{ij}^k \overset{def.}{=} \frac{1}{2} \sum_{s=0}^{d} g^{sk} \left(g_{si,j} - g_{ij,s} + g_{js,i} \right). \tag{B.6}$$

We will first form matrices of Christoffel symbols and their derivatives. Since the metric (B.1) is diagonal, the sum in (B.6) reduces to

$$\Gamma_{ij}^k \overset{def.}{=} \frac{1}{2} g^{kk} \left(g_{ki,j} - g_{ij,k} + g_{jk,i} \right), \tag{B.7}$$

which is only nonzero if at least two of i, j, k are equal. Since the metric is symmetric, if $k = i$ then

$$\Gamma_{kj}^k = \Gamma_{jk}^k = \frac{1}{2} g^{kk} g_{kk,j} \tag{B.8}$$

and if $i = j$ then

$$\Gamma_{ii}^k = \frac{1}{2} g^{kk} (2 g_{ki,i} - g_{ii,k}). \tag{B.9}$$

We denote by $\left[\Gamma_{ij}^k \right]$ the matrix with rows indexed by i, columns indexed by j, and k fixed, and we use (B.9) to compute the diagonal entries and (B.8) to compute the nonzero non-diagonal entries of this matrix to obtain

187

$$\left[\Gamma^0_{ij}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{d}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l & & & & & \\ & \frac{1}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l & & & & \\ & & A_2 & & & \\ & & & \ddots & & \\ & & & & A_d \end{pmatrix} \qquad \text{(B.10)}$$

for $A_i \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{(d-1)a_i^{d-1}H_i e^{2\beta x_1}}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^d}$, $2 \le i \le d$,

$$\left[\Gamma^1_{ij}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \frac{1}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l & & & \\ \frac{1}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l & 0 & & & \\ & & B_2 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & B_d \end{pmatrix} \qquad \text{(B.11)}$$

for $B_i \stackrel{def.}{=} -\beta\frac{a_i^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}}{(a_2\cdots a_d)}$, $2 \le i \le d$, and

$$\left[\Gamma^k_{ij}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & \cdots & \frac{(d-1)}{2}H_k \text{ in } k^{th} \text{ column} & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \cdots & \beta \text{ in } k^{th} \text{ column} & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & & & & \\ \frac{(d-1)}{2}H_k \text{ in } k^{th} \text{ row} & \beta \text{ in } k^{th} \text{ row} & & & & \\ \vdots & \vdots & & & & \\ 0 & 0 & & & & \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\text{(B.12)}$$

for each $k \in \{2,\ldots,d\}$.

Taking derivatives of the Christoffel symbols in (B.10), (B.11) and (B.12) with respect to $x_0 = t$ (denoted by dot), we get

$$
\left[\Gamma^0_{ij,0}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{d}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l & & & & & \\ & \frac{1}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}}\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l - (d-1)\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l\right)^2\right) & & & & \\ & & C_2 & & & \\ & & & \ddots & & \\ & & & & C_d \end{pmatrix}
$$

(B.13)

for $C_i \overset{def.}{=} \dot{A}_i = \frac{(d-1)a_i^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^d}\left((d-1)H_i^2 + \dot{H}_i - dH_i\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l\right), 2 \le i \le d,$

$$
\left[\Gamma^1_{ij,0}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \frac{1}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l & & & \\ \frac{1}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l & 0 & & & \\ & & D_2 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & D_d \end{pmatrix}
$$

(B.14)

for $D_i \overset{def.}{=} \dot{B}_i = \frac{-\beta a_i^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}}{(a_2\cdots a_d)}\left((d-1)H_i - \sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l\right), 2 \le i \le d$ and for $2 \le k \le d,$

$$
\left[\Gamma^k_{ij,0}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & \cdots & \frac{(d-1)}{2}\dot{H}_k \text{ in } k^{th} \text{ column} & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & & & & \\ \frac{(d-1)}{2}\dot{H}_k \text{ in } k^{th} \text{ row} & 0 & & & & \\ \vdots & \vdots & & & & \\ 0 & 0 & & & & \end{pmatrix}. \text{ (B.15)}
$$

Taking derivatives of the Christoffel symbols in (B.10), (B.11) and (B.12) with respect to x_1,

$$
\left[\Gamma^0_{ij,1}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & & & & \\ & 0 & & & \\ & & E_2 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & E_d \end{pmatrix}
\tag{B.16}
$$

for $E_i \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1} A_i = \frac{\beta(d-1)a_i^{d-1}H_i e^{2\beta x_1}}{(a_2\cdots a_d)^d}, 2 \le i \le d$,

$$
\left[\Gamma^1_{ij,1}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & & & & \\ & 0 & & & \\ & & F_2 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & F_d \end{pmatrix}
\tag{B.17}
$$

for $F_i \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1} B_i = -2\beta^2 \frac{a_i^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}}{(a_2\cdots a_d)}, 2 \le i \le d$, and also

$$
\left[\Gamma^k_{ij,1}\right] = 0.
\tag{B.18}
$$

for each $k \in \{2,\ldots,d\}$.

To form the first sum in $R^{(1)}_{ij}$ we note that the metric, and therefore the Christoffel symbols, depend only on x_0, x_1 and we use the matrices (B.13) and (B.17) to obtain $\left[\sum_{k=0}^{d} \Gamma^k_{ij,k}\right] = \left[\sum_{k=0}^{d} \Gamma^0_{ij,0} + \sum_{k=0}^{d} \Gamma^1_{ij,1}\right] =$

$$\begin{pmatrix} \frac{d}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l & & & & \\ & \frac{1}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}}\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_l - (d-1)\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l\right)^2\right) & & & \\ & & J_2 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & J_d \end{pmatrix} \qquad (\text{B.19})$$

for $J_i \overset{def.}{=} C_i + F_i = \dfrac{a_i^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}}{(a_2\cdots a_d)^d}\left(\dfrac{(d-1)^2}{2}H_i^2 + \dfrac{(d-1)}{2}\dot{H}_i - \dfrac{d(d-1)}{2}H_i\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l - 2\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}\right)$

for $2 \le i \le d$. To form the second sum in $R_{ij}^{(1)}$, again since the Christoffel symbols depend only on the variables x_0, x_1, all nonzero entries of the resulting matrix are contained in the rows indexed by $i = 0, 1$. Therefore

$$\left[\sum_{k=0}^{d}\Gamma_{kj,i}^{k}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} \overrightarrow{\sum_{k=0}^{d}\Gamma_{kj,0}^{k}} \\ \overrightarrow{\sum_{k=0}^{d}\Gamma_{kj,1}^{k}} \\ \overrightarrow{0} \\ \vdots \\ \overrightarrow{0} \end{pmatrix}. \qquad (\text{B.20})$$

For a fixed column j, $\displaystyle\sum_{k=0}^{d}\Gamma_{kj,0}^{k} = \Gamma_{0j,0}^{0} + \cdots + \Gamma_{dj,0}^{d}$ is the sum of the $i = 0$ entry of the jth column of (B.13), the $i = 1$ entry of the jth column of (B.14), the $i = 2$ entry of the jth column of (B.15) with $k = 2$, and so on until finally the $i = d$ entry of the jth column of (B.15) with $k = d$. A similar methodology of summing entries of (B.16), (B.17) and (B.18) will give the column entries of the row vector $\overrightarrow{\displaystyle\sum_{k=0}^{d}\Gamma_{kj,1}^{k}}$. Therefore (B.20) becomes

191

$$\left[\sum_{k=0}^{d}\Gamma_{kj,i}^{k}\right] = \begin{pmatrix} d\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_{l} & & & \\ & 0 & & \\ & & \ddots & \\ & & & 0 \end{pmatrix}. \tag{B.21}$$

Subtracting (B.19) from (B.21), we obtain $R^{(1)} \overset{def.}{=} \left[R_{ij}^{(1)}\right] =$

$$\begin{pmatrix} \frac{d}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_{l} & & & & \\ & \frac{-1}{2(a_{2}\cdots a_{d})^{d-1}}\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d}\dot{H}_{l} - (d-1)\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_{l}\right)^{2}\right) & & & \\ & & -J_{2} & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & -J_{d} \end{pmatrix}. \tag{B.22}$$

Next we define matrices

$$\gamma^{(j)} = \left[\gamma_{mk}^{(j)}\right] \overset{def.}{=} \Gamma_{jk}^{m}, \tag{B.23}$$

indexed by $j \in \{0, 1, \ldots, d\}$, which will help to compute the double sums $R_{ij}^{(2)}$ and $R_{ij}^{(3)}$ in (B.4) and (B.5). For example, the matrix $\gamma^{(0)}$ has rows that are equal to the $i = 0$ rows of the matrices (B.10), (B.11) and (B.12) of Christoffel symbols, the matrix $\gamma^{(1)}$ has rows that are equal to the $i = 1$ rows of the matrices (B.10), (B.11)

and (B.12), etc. Therefore we obtain

$$
\gamma^{(0)} = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{d}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l & & & & \\ & \frac{1}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l & & & \\ & & \frac{(d-1)}{2}H_2 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & \frac{(d-1)}{2}H_d \end{pmatrix}, \tag{B.24}
$$

$$
\gamma^{(1)} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \frac{1}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}}\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l & & & \\ \frac{1}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d}H_l & 0 & & & \\ & & \beta & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & \beta \end{pmatrix}, \tag{B.25}
$$

and

$$
\gamma^{(j)} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & \cdots & A_j \text{ in the } j^{th} \text{ column} & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \cdots & B_j \text{ in the } j^{th} \text{ column} & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & & & & \\ \frac{(d-1)}{2}H_j \text{ in the } j^{th} \text{ row} & \beta \text{ in the } j^{th} \text{ row} & & & & \\ \vdots & \vdots & & & & \\ 0 & 0 & & & & \end{pmatrix}
$$

$$
\tag{B.26}
$$

for each $2 \le j \le d$.

Since $\Gamma_{ij}^k = \Gamma_{ji}^k$, the double sum $R_{ij}^{(2)}$ in (B.4) is

$$R_{ij}^{(2)} = \sum_{m=0}^{d}\sum_{n=0}^{d} \Gamma_{im}^{n}\Gamma_{nj}^{m} = \sum_{m=0}^{d}\sum_{n=0}^{d} \Gamma_{im}^{n}\Gamma_{jn}^{m} = \sum_{m=0}^{d}\sum_{n=0}^{d} \gamma_{nm}^{(i)}\gamma_{mn}^{(j)} = Tr\left(\gamma^{(i)}\gamma^{(j)}\right).$$

(B.27)

That is, $R^{(2)} \overset{def.}{=} \left[R_{ij}^{(2)}\right] =$

$$\begin{pmatrix} \frac{(d^2+1)}{4}\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l\right)^2 + \frac{(d-1)^2}{4}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 & \frac{\beta(d-1)}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l & & & \\ \frac{\beta(d-1)}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l & \frac{1}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}}\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l\right)^2 + \beta^2(d-1) & & & \\ & & K_2 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \\ & & & & K_d \end{pmatrix}$$

(B.28)

for $K_i = (d-1)H_i A_i + 2\beta B_i = \frac{a_i^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}}{(a_2\cdots a_d)^d}\left(\frac{(d-1)^2}{2}H_i^2 - 2\beta^2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}\right), 2 \leq i \leq d.$

Again since $\Gamma_{ij}^k = \Gamma_{ji}^k$, the double sum $R_{ij}^{(3)}$ in (B.5) is

$$R_{ij}^{(3)} = \sum_{m=0}^{d}\sum_{n=0}^{d} \Gamma_{ij}^{m}\Gamma_{nm}^{n} = \sum_{m=0}^{d}\sum_{n=0}^{d} \Gamma_{ji}^{m}\Gamma_{mn}^{n} = \sum_{m=0}^{d}\sum_{n=0}^{d} \gamma_{mi}^{(j)}\gamma_{nn}^{(m)} = \sum_{m=0}^{d} \gamma_{mi}^{(j)} \, Tr\, \gamma^{(m)}.$$

(B.29)

That is, the jth column of the matrix $R^{(3)} \overset{def.}{=} \left[R_{ij}^{(3)}\right]$ is equal to $\left(\gamma^{(j)}\right)^T \cdot \gamma$ or equivalently $\gamma^T \cdot \gamma^{(j)}$ where γ is the column vector

$$\gamma \overset{def.}{=} \begin{pmatrix} Tr\,\gamma^{(0)} \\ Tr\,\gamma^{(1)} \\ Tr\,\gamma^{(2)} \\ \vdots \\ Tr\,\gamma^{(d)} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} d\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l \\ \beta(d-1) \\ 0 \\ \vdots \\ 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

(B.30)

194

and ^{T} denotes transposition. Therefore $R^{(3)} =$

$$
\begin{pmatrix}
\frac{d^2}{2}\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l\right)^2 & \frac{\beta(d-1)}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l & & & \\
\frac{\beta(d-1)}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l & \frac{d}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}}\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l\right)^2 & & & \\
& & L_2 & & \\
& & & \ddots & \\
& & & & L_d
\end{pmatrix}
\tag{B.31}
$$

for

$$
\begin{aligned}
L_i &= dA_i\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l + \beta(d-1)B_i \\
&= \frac{a_i^{d-1}e^{2\beta x_1}}{(a_2\cdots a_d)^d}\left(\frac{d(d-1)}{2}H_i\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l - \beta^2(d-1)(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}\right).
\end{aligned}
\tag{B.32}
$$

By (B.22), (B.28) and (B.31), the coefficients of the Ricci tensor (B.2) are

$$
[R_{ij}] = R^{(1)} + R^{(2)} - R^{(3)} =
$$

$$
\begin{pmatrix}
M & & & & \\
& N & & & \\
& & P_2 & & \\
& & & \ddots & \\
& & & & P_d
\end{pmatrix}
\tag{B.33}
$$

for

$$
M \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{d}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} \dot{H}_l + \frac{(1-d^2)}{2}\sum_{2\le l<k\le d} H_l H_k - \frac{(d-1)}{2}\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2,
\tag{B.34}
$$

$$
N \stackrel{def.}{=} \frac{-1}{2(a_2\cdots a_d)^{d-1}}\sum_{l=2}^{d} \dot{H}_l + \beta^2(d-1)
\tag{B.35}
$$

195

and

$$P_i \stackrel{def.}{=} -J_i + K_i - L_i = \frac{a_i^{d-1} e^{2\beta x_1}}{(a_2 \cdots a_d)^d} \left(-\frac{(d-1)}{2} \dot{H}_i + \beta^2 (d-1)(a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1} \right),$$

(B.36)

$2 \leq i \leq d$, and where we have used that $\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l \right)^2 = \sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + 2 \sum_{2 \leq l < k \leq d} H_l H_k.$

The scalar curvature is defined as $R \stackrel{def.}{=} \sum_{k=0}^{d} R_k^k \stackrel{def.}{=} \sum_{k=0}^{d} \sum_{l=0}^{d} g^{kl} R_{lk}$ therefore for our example,

$$\begin{aligned}
R &= \frac{-1}{(a_2 \cdots a_d)^d} M + \frac{1}{(a_2 \cdots a_d)} N + \sum_{i=2}^{d} \frac{P_i}{a_i^{d-1} e^{2\beta x_1}} \\
&= \frac{1}{(a_2 \cdots a_d)^d} \left(\frac{(d-1)}{2} \sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 - d \sum_{l=2}^{d} \dot{H}_l + \frac{(d^2-1)}{2} \sum_{2 \leq l < k \leq d} H_l H_k \right. \\
&\qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad \left. + \beta^2 d(d-1)(a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1} \right)
\end{aligned}$$

(B.37)

Finally, the nonzero coefficients of the Einstein tensor $G_{ij} = R_{ij} - \frac{1}{2} R g_{ij}$ are

$$G_{00} = -\frac{(d-1)}{4} \left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} H_l^2 + (d+1) \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k - 2d\beta^2 (a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1} \right) \qquad \text{(B.38)}$$

$G_{11} = \frac{-(d-1)}{4(a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1}} \cdot$

$$\left(\sum_{l=2}^{d} (H_l^2 - 2\dot{H}_l) + (d+1) \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k + 2(d-2)\beta^2 (a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1} \right)$$

and $G_{ii} = \frac{-(d-1)a_i^{d-1} e^{2\beta x_1}}{4(a_2 \cdots a_d)^d} \cdot$

$$\left(2\dot{H}_i + \sum_{l=2}^{d} \left(H_l^2 - \frac{2d}{(d-1)} \dot{H}_l \right) + (d+1) \sum_{l<k} H_l H_k + 2(d-2)\beta^2 (a_2 \cdots a_d)^{d-1} \right)$$

for $2 \leq i, l, k \leq d$.

APPENDIX C

THE NON-POSITIVITY OF $\sum_{l<k} c_l c_k$

For the Bianchi I and Bianchi V models considered in Chapters 4 and 6, we make use of the quantity

$$y \overset{def.}{=} \sum_{1 \le l < k \le d} c_l c_k \tag{C.1}$$

for arbitrary constants $c_1, \ldots, c_d \in \mathbb{R}$ and $d \in \mathbb{N}$ such that

$$c_1 + \cdots + c_d = 0. \tag{C.2}$$

We will show that y is non-positive for all values of $c_1, \ldots, c_d, d$.

By (C.2), we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
y &= \sum_{1 \le l < k \le d-1} c_l c_k + c_d \sum_{l=1}^{d-1} c_l \\
&= \sum_{1 \le l < k \le d-1} c_l c_k - \left(\sum_{l=1}^{d-1} c_l \right)^2 \\
&= \sum_{1 \le l < k \le d-1} c_l c_k - \sum_{l=1}^{d-1} c_l^2 - 2 \sum_{1 \le l < k \le d-1} c_l c_k \\
&= -\sum_{l=1}^{d-1} c_l^2 - \sum_{1 \le l < k \le d-1} c_l c_k
\end{aligned}
\tag{C.3}
$$

so that by the following Lemma, $y \le 0$.

Lemma C.1 *The sum*

$$z_{M,N} \stackrel{def.}{=} \sum_{l=1}^{M} c_l^2 + \frac{2}{N} \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M} c_l c_k \tag{C.4}$$

is non-negative for all $M, N \in \mathbb{N}$ and $c_1, \ldots, c_M \in \mathbb{R}$.

Proof. We will prove this Lemma by induction on M. We begin with $M = 1$, for which $z_{1,N} = c_1^2 \ge 0$ for all $c_1 \in \mathbb{R}$ and for all $N \in \mathbb{N}$. For $M = 2$, we complete the square to obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
z_{2,N} &= c_1^2 + c_2^2 + \frac{2}{N} c_1 c_2 \\
&= c_2^2 + \left(\frac{2}{N} c_1 \right) c_2 + \left(c_1^2 \right) \\
&= \left(c_2 + \frac{c_1}{N} \right)^2 - \frac{c_1^2}{N^2} + c_1^2 \\
&= \left(c_2 + \frac{c_1}{N} \right)^2 + \left(\frac{N^2 - 1}{N^2} \right) c_1^2.
\end{aligned}
\tag{C.5}
$$

Therefore $z_{2,N} \ge 0$ for all $N \ge 1$. By induction on M, we assume that

$$z_{M-1,N} = \sum_{l=1}^{M-1} c_l^2 + \frac{2}{N} \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} c_l c_k \ge 0 \text{ for all } N, \tag{C.6}$$

and we consider $z_{M,N}$. If $N = 1$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
z_{M,1} &= \sum_{l=1}^{M} c_l^2 + 2 \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M} c_l c_k \\
&= \left(\sum_{l=1}^{M} c_l \right)^2 \ge 0.
\end{aligned}
\tag{C.7}
$$

If $N = 2$,

$$z_{M,2} = \sum_{l=1}^{M} c_l^2 + \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M} c_l c_k. \tag{C.8}$$

Now, consider the quantity

$$\left(\frac{c_1}{2} + \frac{c_2}{2} + \cdots + \frac{c_{M-1}}{2} + c_M \right)^2 = \sum_{l=1}^{M-1} \frac{c_l^2}{4} + c_M^2 + 2c_M \sum_{l=1}^{M-1} \left(\frac{c_l}{2} \right) + 2 \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} \left(\frac{c_l}{2} \right) \left(\frac{c_k}{2} \right). \tag{C.9}$$

198

One can double check that (C.9) contains the correct number of terms by noting that

$$(M-1) + 1 + 2(M-1) + 2\frac{(M-2)(M-1)}{2}$$

$$= M + 2M - 2 + M^2 - 3M + 2$$

$$= M^2. \tag{C.10}$$

The last term in (C.10) is due to the fact that the sum $\displaystyle\sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1}$ contains $(M-2)(M-1)/2$ terms. One can see this by

$$\sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} 1 = \sum_{k=2}^{M-1}\sum_{l=1}^{k-1} 1$$

$$= \sum_{k=2}^{M-1}(k-1)$$

$$= \sum_{i=1}^{M-2} i$$

$$= \frac{(M-2)(M-1)}{2}. \tag{C.11}$$

Simplifying (C.9) we obtain

$$\left(\frac{c_1}{2} + \frac{c_2}{2} + \cdots + \frac{c_{M-1}}{2} + c_M\right)^2 = \sum_{l=1}^{M-1}\frac{c_l^2}{4} + c_M^2 + c_M\sum_{l=1}^{M-1} c_l + \frac{1}{2}\sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} c_l c_k \tag{C.12}$$

so that we may write (C.8) as

$$z_{M,2} = \left(\frac{c_1}{2} + \frac{c_2}{2} + \cdots + \frac{c_{M-1}}{2} + c_M\right)^2 + \frac{3}{4}\sum_{l=1}^{M-1} c_l^2 + \frac{1}{2}\sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} c_l c_k$$

$$= \left(\frac{c_1}{2} + \frac{c_2}{2} + \cdots + \frac{c_{M-1}}{2} + c_M\right)^2 + \frac{3}{4}\left(\sum_{l=1}^{M-1} c_l^2 + \frac{2}{3}\sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} c_l c_k\right). \tag{C.13}$$

By the inductive assumption on M in (C.6), the second quantity in parenthesis on the right-hand side of (C.13) is non-negative. Therefore $z_{M,2}$ is non-negative.

Finally, to rewrite

$$z_{M,N} = \sum_{l=1}^{M} c_l^2 + \frac{2}{N} \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M} c_l c_k \qquad (C.14)$$

for general N we consider the quantity

$$\left(\frac{c_1}{N} + \frac{c_2}{N} + \cdots + \frac{c_{M-1}}{N} + c_M \right)^2 = \sum_{l=1}^{M-1} \frac{c_l^2}{N^2} + c_M^2 + 2 c_M \sum_{l=1}^{M-1} \left(\frac{c_l}{N} \right) + 2 \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} \left(\frac{c_l}{N} \right) \left(\frac{c_k}{N} \right) . \qquad (C.15)$$

As in (C.10), one can double check that the right-hand side of (C.15) contains M^2 terms. Simplifying (C.15) we obtain

$$\left(\frac{c_1}{N} + \frac{c_2}{N} + \cdots + \frac{c_{M-1}}{N} + c_M \right)^2 = \frac{1}{N^2} \sum_{l=1}^{M-1} c_l^2 + c_M^2 + \frac{2}{N} c_M \sum_{l=1}^{M-1} c_l + \frac{2}{N^2} \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} c_l c_k \qquad (C.16)$$

so that we may write (C.14) as $z_{M,N} =$

$$\left(\frac{c_1}{N} + \frac{c_2}{N} + \cdots + \frac{c_{M-1}}{N} + c_M \right)^2 + \frac{(N^2 - 1)}{N^2} \sum_{l=1}^{M-1} c_l^2 + 2 \left(\frac{1}{N} - \frac{1}{N^2} \right) \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} c_l c_k$$

$$= \left(\frac{c_1}{N} + \frac{c_2}{N} + \cdots + \frac{c_{M-1}}{N} + c_M \right)^2 + \frac{(N^2 - 1)}{N^2} \left(\sum_{l=1}^{M-1} c_l^2 + \frac{2}{(N+1)} \sum_{1 \le l < k \le M-1} c_l c_k \right) . \qquad (C.17)$$

By the inductive assumption on M in (C.6), the second quantity in parenthesis on the right-hand side of (C.17) is non-negative. This proves the Lemma.

$$\diamond$$

APPENDIX D

EXACT SOLUTIONS TO EMP EQUATIONS

Below in Table 14, we list some exact solutions of the generalized EMP equation with one non-linear term

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{\lambda_1}{Y(\tau)^{B_1}} \tag{D.1}$$

for constants λ_1, B_1. In Table 14, $a_0, b_0, c_0, d_0, Q_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ are constants.

In special cases when the EMP reduces to a classical EMP equation

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{\lambda}{Y^3}, \tag{D.2}$$

for $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}$, exact solutions to the classical EMP can be obtained by a superposition principle: if $Y_1(\tau)$ and $Y_2(\tau)$ are two linearly independent solutions of the homogeneous equation $Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = 0$, then their Wronskian $W(Y_1, Y_2) \overset{def.}{=} \begin{vmatrix} Y_1 & Y_1' \\ Y_2 & Y_2' \end{vmatrix}$ is constant and $Y(\tau) = \left(AY_1^2(\tau) + BY_2^2(\tau) + 2CY_1(\tau)Y_2(\tau)\right)^{1/2}$ is a solution to (D.2) where $A, B, C \in \mathbb{R}$ are constants that satisfy $AB - C^2 = \lambda/W(Y_1, Y_2)^2$. Some of the entries in Table 14 are obtained from this superposition principle.

We also record solution

$$Y(\tau) = \left(\frac{4}{\theta^2}\tau^2 - 1\right)^{1/4} \tag{D.3}$$

to the generalized EMP with two non-linear terms

$$Y''(\tau) + Q(\tau)Y(\tau) = \frac{\lambda_1 = -1/\theta^2}{Y(\tau)^{B_1=3}} + \frac{\lambda_2 = -3/\theta^2}{Y(\tau)^{B_2=7}} \tag{D.4}$$

for $Q = 0$ and constant $\theta > 0$.

Table 14. Exact Solutions of EMP

	$Y(\tau)$	$Q(\tau)$	λ_1	B_1
1	$cos(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)$	$Q_0 > 0$	0	n/a
2	$sin(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)$	$Q_0 > 0$	0	n/a
3	$\begin{array}{l}\left(a_0 cos^2(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau) + b_0 sin^2(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)\right. \\ \left. +2c_0 cos(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)sin(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau)\right)^{1/2}\end{array}$	$Q_0 > 0$	$Q_0(a_0 b_0 - c_0^2)$	3
4	$a_0 \tau^{d_0}$	$\frac{d_0(1-d_0)}{\tau^2}$	0	n/a
5	$\left(a_0 \tau^{2d_0} + b_0 \tau^{2(1-d_0)} + 2c_0 \tau\right)^{1/2}$	$\frac{d_0(1-d_0)}{\tau^2}$	$(1-2d_0)^2(a_0 b_0 - c_0^2)$	3
6	τ	$\frac{\lambda_1}{\tau^{B_1+1}}$	λ_1	B_1
7	$(a_0^2\tau^2 \pm b_0^2)^{1/2}$	$\frac{\lambda_1 \mp a_0^2 b_0^2}{\left(a_0^2\tau^2 \pm b_0^2\right)^2}$	λ_1	3

In order to map an exact solution $Y(\tau)$ of a generalized or classical EMP equation to an exact solution of Einstein's equations via the correspondences in this thesis, one must first solve for $\tau(t)$ in the differential equation

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{r_0} \tag{D.5}$$

for some constant $r_0 \neq 0$ that is dependent on the cosmological model. For the EMP reformulations of Bianchi I and Bianchi V one must then solve for $\sigma(t)$ in

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\dot{\tau}(t)^{s_0}} \tag{D.6}$$

for some constant $s_0 \neq 0$. Also, in each cosmological model, in order to find the scale factor $\phi(t)$, one must first integrate some constant multiple of the square root

of the function $Q(\tau)$ (and then compose the result with $\tau(t)$). That is, to find $\phi(t)$ one must first compute

$$\varphi(\tau) = \int \sqrt{\alpha_0 Q(\tau)} d\tau \tag{D.7}$$

for some constant α_0. Therefore for each solution in Table 14, we now record some solutions to (D.5), (D.6) and (D.7).

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 1 in Table 14, equation (D.5) for $r_0 = 1$ is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \cos\left(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau(t)\right) \tag{D.8}$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{Q_0}} Arctan\left(tanh\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)\right) \tag{D.9}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t))^1 = \frac{sech^2\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)}{1 + tanh^2\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)} = sech\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)\right). \tag{D.10}$$

Also, we record that

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y'(\tau(t)) &= -\sqrt{Q_0}\sin\left(2Arctan\left(tanh\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)\right)\right) \\
&= \frac{-2\sqrt{Q_0}tanh\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)}{1 + tanh^2\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)} \\
&= -\sqrt{Q_0}tanh\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)\right)
\end{aligned} \tag{D.11}
$$

since $sin(2Arctan(x)) = 2cos(Arctan(x))sin(Arctan(x)) = \frac{2x}{1+x^2}$.

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 2 in Table 14, equation (D.5) for $r_0 = 1$ is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \sin\left(\sqrt{Q_0}\tau(t)\right) \tag{D.12}$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{Q_0}} Arctan\left(e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)}\right) \tag{D.13}$$

203

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t))^1 = \frac{2e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}}{1 + e^{2\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}} = sech\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)\right). \qquad \text{(D.14)}$$

Also, we record that

$$\begin{aligned}
Y'(\tau(t)) &= \sqrt{Q_0}\cos\left(2Arctan\left(e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right)\right) \\
&= \frac{\sqrt{Q_0}\left(1 - e^{2\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right)}{\left(1 + e^{2\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right)} \\
&= \frac{\sqrt{Q_0}\left(e^{-\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)} - e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right)}{\left(e^{-\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)} + e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right)} \\
&= -\sqrt{Q_0}tanh\left(\sqrt{Q_0}(t - t_0)\right) \qquad \text{(D.15)}
\end{aligned}$$

since $cos(2Arctan(x)) = cos^2(Arctan(x)) - sin^2(Arctan(x)) = \frac{1-x^2}{1+x^2}$.

For $Q(\tau) = Q_0 > 0$ from lines 1-3, (D.7) becomes

$$\varphi(\tau) = \int \sqrt{\alpha_0 Q_0}d\tau = \sqrt{\alpha_0 Q_0}\tau + \beta_0 \qquad \text{(D.16)}$$

for integration constant $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (D.16) with $\tau(t)$ in (D.9),

$$\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = 2\sqrt{\alpha_0}Arctan\left(tanh\left(\frac{\sqrt{Q_0}}{2}(t - t_0)\right)\right) + \beta_0. \qquad \text{(D.17)}$$

Composing (D.16) with $\tau(t)$ in (D.13),

$$\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = 2\sqrt{\alpha_0}Arctan\left(e^{\sqrt{Q_0}(t-t_0)}\right) + \beta_0. \qquad \text{(D.18)}$$

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 4 in Table 14, equation (D.5) is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \left(a_0\tau(t)^{d_0}\right)^{r_0} \qquad \text{(D.19)}$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = ((1 - r_0 d_0)a_0^{r_0}(t - t_0))^{\frac{1}{1-r_0 d_0}} \qquad \text{(D.20)}$$

204

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $r_0 \neq 1/d_0$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{r_0} = a_0^{r_0} \left((1 - r_0 d_0) a_0^{r_0} (t - t_0) \right)^{\frac{r_0 d_0}{1 - r_0 d_0}} . \tag{D.21}$$

Also, we record that

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y'(\tau(t)) &= d_0 a_0 \tau(t)^{d_0 - 1} \\
&= d_0 a_0 \left((1 - r_0 d_0) a_0^{r_0} (t - t_0) \right)^{\frac{d_0 - 1}{1 - r_0 d_0}} .
\end{aligned}
\tag{D.22}
$$

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 4 in Table 14, equation (D.5) for $r_0 = 1/d_0$ is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \tau(t) \tag{D.23}$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = a_0 e^{t - t_0} \tag{D.24}$$

for $a_0, t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t))^{r_0 = 1/d_0} = a_0 e^{t - t_0}. \tag{D.25}$$

Also, we record that

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y'(\tau(t)) &= d_0 \tau(t)^{d_0 - 1} \\
&= d_0 a_0^{d_0 - 1} e^{(d_0 - 1)(t - t_0)} .
\end{aligned}
\tag{D.26}
$$

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 5 in Table 14 with $b_0 = d_0 = 0$, equation (D.5) for $r_0 = 1$ is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = (a_0 + 2 c_0 \tau(t))^{1/2} \tag{D.27}$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = \frac{1}{2} \left(c_0 (t - t_0)^2 - \frac{a_0}{c_0} \right) \tag{D.28}$$

for $c_0 > 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = c_0 (t - t_0). \tag{D.29}$$

Also, we record that

$$Y'(\tau(t)) = \frac{c_0}{(a_0 + 2c_0\tau(t))^{1/2}}$$

$$= \frac{1}{t - t_0} \qquad (\text{D.30})$$

for $t > t_0$ and $c_0 > 0$. Equation (D.6) for $s_0 = 1$ then becomes

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{c_0(t - t_0)}. \qquad (\text{D.31})$$

Integrating, we obtain

$$\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{c_0}\ln(c_0(t - t_0)). \qquad (\text{D.32})$$

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 5 in Table 14 with $b_0 > 0$ and $d_0 = 0$, equation (D.5) for $r_0 = 1$ is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = (a_0 + b_0\tau(t)^2 + 2c_0\tau(t))^{1/2} \qquad (\text{D.33})$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = \frac{1}{4b_0^{3/2}}\left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - 4\lambda e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - 4\sqrt{b_0}c_0\right) \qquad (\text{D.34})$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\lambda \overset{def.}{=} a_0 b_0 - c_0^2$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = \frac{1}{4}e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} + \frac{\lambda}{b_0}e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}. \qquad (\text{D.35})$$

Also, we record that

$$Y'(\tau(t)) = \frac{b_0\tau(t) + c_0}{Y(\tau(t))}$$

$$= \sqrt{b_0}\frac{\left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} - 4\lambda e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}\right)}{\left(b_0 e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)} + 4\lambda e^{-\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}\right)}. \qquad (\text{D.36})$$

For $s_0 = 1$, (D.6) shows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma(t) &= \left(\frac{b_0}{\lambda}\right) \int \frac{e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}}{\left(1 - \frac{b_0}{-4\lambda} e^{2\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}\right)} dt \\
&= \left(\frac{\sqrt{b_0}}{\lambda}\right) \int \frac{1}{\left(1 - \frac{b_0}{-4\lambda} u^2\right)} du \bigg|_{u = e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}} \\
&= \sqrt{\frac{-4\lambda}{b_0}} \left(\frac{\sqrt{b_0}}{\lambda}\right) Arccoth\left(\sqrt{\frac{b_0}{-4\lambda}} u\right) \bigg|_{u = e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}} \\
&= \frac{-2}{\sqrt{-\lambda}} Arccoth\left(\sqrt{\frac{b_0}{-4\lambda}} e^{\sqrt{b_0}(t-t_0)}\right) \qquad \text{(D.37)}
\end{aligned}
$$

for $\lambda < 0$.

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 5 in Table 14 with $a_0 = b_0 = 0$ and $c_0 = 1/2$, the equation $\dot\tau(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t))$ is

$$
\dot\tau(t) = \theta \sqrt{\tau(t)} \qquad \text{(D.38)}
$$

which has solution

$$
\tau(t) = \frac{\theta^2}{4}(t - t_0)^2 \qquad \text{(D.39)}
$$

for $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\theta > 0$. One can check this by calculating

$$
\dot\tau(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t)) = \frac{\theta^2}{2}(t - t_0). \qquad \text{(D.40)}
$$

Also, we record that

$$
Y'(\tau(t)) = \frac{1}{2\sqrt{\tau(t)}} = \frac{1}{\theta(t - t_0)}. \qquad \text{(D.41)}
$$

For $Q(\tau)$ from lines 4-5 in Table 14, (D.7) becomes

$$
\varphi(\tau) = \int \frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0 d_0(1 - d_0)}}{\tau} d\tau = \sqrt{\alpha_0 d_0(1 - d_0)} \ln(\tau) + \beta_0 \qquad \text{(D.42)}
$$

for $\tau > 0$, $0 \le d_0 \le 1$ and integration constant $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (D.42) with $\tau(t)$ in (D.20),

$$
\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0 d_0(1 - d_0)}}{(1 - r_0 d_0)} \ln\left[((1 - r_0 d_0)(t - t_0))\right] + \beta_0 \qquad \text{(D.43)}
$$

for $r_0 < d_0$ and $t > t_0$.

Composing (D.42) with $\tau(t)$ in (D.39),

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = 2\sqrt{\alpha_0 d_0(1 - d_0)} \ln(t - t_0) + \beta_0 \qquad (D.44)$$

for $t > t_0$.

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 6 in Table 14, we solve for $\tau(t)$ in the equation

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t)) = \theta \tau(t) \qquad (D.45)$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = a_0 e^{\theta(t-t_0)} \qquad (D.46)$$

for $a_0, t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\theta > 0$. For $Q(\tau)$ from line 6 in Table 14, (D.7) becomes

$$\varphi(\tau) = \int \frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0 \lambda_1}}{\tau^{(B_1+1)/2}} d\tau = \frac{2\sqrt{\alpha_0 \lambda_1}}{(1 - B_1)\tau^{(B_1-1)/2}} + \beta_0 \qquad (D.47)$$

for $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Composing (D.47) with $\tau(t)$ in (D.46),

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \frac{2\sqrt{\alpha_0 \lambda_1}}{(1 - B_1)} a_0^{(1-B_1)/2} e^{\theta(1-B_1)(t-t_0)/2} + \beta_0. \qquad (D.48)$$

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 7 in Table 14 with the plus sign and $a_0, b_0 > 0$, equation (D.5) for $r_0 = 1$ is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \left(a_0^2 \tau(t)^2 + b_0^2 \right)^{1/2} \qquad (D.49)$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = \frac{b_0}{a_0} \sinh(a_0(t - t_0)) \qquad (D.50)$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by computing

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = b_0 \cosh(a_0(t - t_0)). \qquad (D.51)$$

Also, we record that

$$Y'(\tau(t)) = a_0 \tanh(a_0(t - t_0)). \qquad (D.52)$$

For $Q(\tau)$ from line 7 in Table 14 with the plus sign, (D.7) becomes

$$\varphi(\tau) = \sqrt{\alpha_0(\lambda_1 - a_0^2 b_0^2)} \int \frac{d\tau}{a_0^2 \tau^2 + b_0^2} = \frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0(\lambda_1 - a_0^2 b_0^2)}}{a_0 b_0} Arctan\left(\frac{a_0}{b_0}\tau\right) + \beta_0$$

(D.53)

for $\tau > -b_0/a_0$ and assuming $a_0, b_0, (\lambda_1 - a_0^2 b_0^2) > 0$ and $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Composing (D.53) with $\tau(t)$ in (D.50),

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = \frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0(\lambda_1 - a_0^2 b_0^2)}}{a_0 b_0} Arctan\left(\sinh(a_0(t - t_0))\right) + \beta_0.$$

(D.54)

For $Y(\tau)$ from line 7 in Table 14 with the minus sign and $a_0, b_0 > 0$, equation (D.5) for $r_0 = 1$ is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \left(a_0^2 \tau(t)^2 - b_0^2\right)^{1/2}$$

(D.55)

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = \frac{b_0}{a_0} \cosh(a_0(t - t_0))$$

(D.56)

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by computing

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t)) = b_0 \sinh(a_0(t - t_0)).$$

(D.57)

Also, we record that

$$Y'(\tau(t)) = a_0 \coth(a_0(t - t_0))$$

(D.58)

for $t > t_0$.

For $Q(\tau)$ from line 7 in Table 14 with the minus sign, (D.7) becomes

$$\varphi(\tau) = \sqrt{\alpha_0(\lambda_1 + a_0^2 b_0^2)} \int \frac{d\tau}{a_0^2 \tau^2 - b_0^2} = -\frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0(\lambda_1 + a_0^2 b_0^2)}}{a_0 b_0} Arctanh\left(\frac{a_0}{b_0}\tau\right) + \beta_0$$

(D.59)

for $\tau > b_0/a_0$ and assuming $a_0, b_0, (\lambda_1 + a_0^2 b_0^2) > 0$ and $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Composing (D.59) with $\tau(t)$ in (D.56),

$$\phi(t) \stackrel{def.}{=} \varphi(\tau(t)) = -\frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0(\lambda_1 + a_0^2 b_0^2)}}{a_0 b_0} Arctanh\left(\cosh(a_0(t - t_0))\right) + \beta_0.$$

(D.60)

For $Y(\tau)$ in (D.3) with $\theta = 1$, equation (D.5) for $r_0 = 4$ is

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = 4\tau(t)^2 - 1 \qquad\qquad (D.61)$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = \frac{-1}{2}coth(2(t - t_0)) \qquad\qquad (D.62)$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = Y(\tau(t))^4 = csch^2(2(t - t_0)) \qquad\qquad (D.63)$$

by the identity $coth^2(x) - 1 = csch^2(x)$. Also, we record that

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y'(\tau(t)) &= \frac{2\tau(t)}{(4\tau(t)^2 - 1)^{3/4}} \\
&= \frac{-coth(2(t - t_0))}{csch^{3/2}(2(t - t_0))} \\
&= -cosh(2(t - t_0))\sqrt{sinh(2(t - t_0))} \qquad\qquad (D.64)
\end{aligned}
$$

for $t > t_0$.

For $Y(\tau)$ in (D.3), we solve for $\tau(t)$ in the equation

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t))^2 = \theta \left(4\tau(t)^2 - 1\right)^{1/2} \qquad\qquad (D.65)$$

which has solution

$$\tau(t) = \frac{\theta}{2}cosh(2(t - t_0)) \qquad\qquad (D.66)$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\tau}(t) = \theta Y(\tau(t))^2 = \theta sinh(2(t - t_0)) \qquad\qquad (D.67)$$

by the identity $cosh^2(x) - 1 = sinh^2(x)$. Also, we record that

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y'(\tau(t)) &= \frac{2\tau(t)}{\theta^2 \left(\frac{4}{\theta^2}\tau(t)^2 - 1\right)^{3/4}} \\
&= \frac{cosh(2(t - t_0))}{\theta sinh^{3/2}(2(t - t_0))} \\
&= \frac{coth(2(t - t_0))}{\theta\sqrt{sinh(2(t - t_0))}} \qquad\qquad (D.68)
\end{aligned}
$$

for $t > t_0$.

APPENDIX E

EXACT SOLUTIONS TO NLS EQUATIONS

In the table below, we list some exact solutions of the NLS

$$u''(\sigma) + [E - P(\sigma)]u(\sigma) = \frac{F_1}{u(\sigma)^{C_1}} \qquad \text{(E.1)}$$

for constants E, F_1, C_1. Note that in Table 15, $a_0, b_0, c_0, d_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ are constants, and any one solution $u(\sigma)$ may solve (E.1) for a few distinct sets of $P(\sigma), E, F_1, C_1$.

Table 15. Exact Solutions of NLS

	$u(\sigma)$	$P(\sigma)$	E	F_1	C_1
1	$a_0\sigma^2 + b_0\sigma + c_0$	$(2a_0 + d_0)/(a_0\sigma^2 + b_0\sigma + c_0)$	0	$-d_0$	0
2	$a_0 \cos^2(b_0\sigma)$	$2b_0^2 tan^2(b_0\sigma)$	$2b_0^2$	0	n/a
		$4b_0^2 tan^2(b_0\sigma)$	0	$-2b_0^2 a_0$	0
3	$a_0 tanh(b_0\sigma)$	c_0	$c_0 + 2b_0^2$	$2b_0^2/a_0^2$	-3
4	$a_0 e^{-\sqrt{-c_0}\sigma} - b_0 e^{\sqrt{-c_0}\sigma}$	0	$c_0 < 0$	0	n/a
5	$(a_0/\sigma)e^{c_0\sigma^2/2}$	$c_0^2\sigma^2 + 2/\sigma^2 + b_0$	$c_0 + b_0$	0	n/a
6	$-a_0 \cosh^2(b_0\sigma)$	$2b_0^2 \tanh(b_0\sigma)^2 + c_0$	$c_0 - 2b_0^2$	0	n/a
7	a_0/σ^{b_0}	$\frac{b_0(b_0+1)}{\sigma^2} + c_0$	c_0	0	n/a

In order to map an exact solution $u(\sigma)$ of a non-linear (or linear) Schrödinger-type equation to an exact solution of Einstein's equations via the correspondences in this thesis, one may first need to solve for $\sigma(t)$ in the differential equation

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta}u(\sigma(t)) \tag{E.2}$$

for $\theta > 0$. Also the scalar field $\phi(t)$ is obtained by integrating a constant multiple of the square root of $P(\sigma)$ (and then composing the result with $\sigma(t)$ or $\sigma(f_\sigma(\tau(t)))$). That is, to find $\phi(t)$ one must first compute

$$\psi(\sigma) = \int \sqrt{\alpha_0 P(\sigma)}d\sigma \tag{E.3}$$

for some constant α_0. Therefore for each solution in Table 15, we now record some solutions to (E.2) and (E.3).

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 1 in Table 15 with $a_0 = 0$, equation (E.2) with $\theta = 1$ is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = b_0\sigma(t) + c_0 \tag{E.4}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = e^{b_0(t-t_0)} - \frac{c_0}{b_0} \tag{E.5}$$

for $b_0 \neq 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by computing that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = u(\sigma(t)) = b_0 e^{b_0(t-t_0)}. \tag{E.6}$$

Also, we note that

$$u'(\sigma(t)) = b_0. \tag{E.7}$$

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 1 in Table 15, equation (E.2) with $\theta = 1$ is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = a_0\sigma(t)^2 + b_0\sigma(t) + c_0 \tag{E.8}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{2a_0}\left(\sqrt{-\Delta}\ tan\left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t-t_0)\right] - b_0\right) \tag{E.9}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$, $a_0 > 0$ and discriminant $\Delta = b_0^2 - 4a_0c_0 < 0$. One can check this by computing that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = u(\sigma(t)) = \frac{-\Delta}{4a_0} sec^2 \left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0) \right]. \tag{E.10}$$

Also, we record that

$$u'(\sigma(t)) = \sqrt{-\Delta} \ tan \left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0) \right]. \tag{E.11}$$

For $P(\sigma)$ from line 1 in Table 15 with $a_0 > 0$, (E.3) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
\psi(\sigma) &= \int \sqrt{\frac{\alpha_0(2a_0 + d_0)}{a_0\sigma^2 + b_0\sigma + c_0}} d\sigma \\
&= \sqrt{\frac{\alpha_0}{a_0}(2a_0 + d_0)} \ \ln \left[2 \left(\sigma + \frac{b_0}{2a_0} + \sqrt{\sigma^2 + \frac{b_0}{a_0}\sigma + \frac{c_0}{a_0}} \right) \right] + \beta_0
\end{aligned} \tag{E.12}$$

for $\Delta = b_0^2 - 4a_0c_0 < 0$ and integration constant $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (E.12) with (E.9),

$$\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) \overset{def.}{=} \psi(\sigma(t)) = \sqrt{\frac{\alpha_0}{a_0}(2a_0 + d_0)} \ \ln \Bigg[\frac{1}{a_0} \bigg(\sqrt{-\Delta} \ tan \left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0) \right] \\
+ \sqrt{-\Delta} sec \left[\frac{\sqrt{-\Delta}}{2}(t - t_0) \right] \bigg) \Bigg] + \beta_0.
\end{aligned} \tag{E.13}$$

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 2 in Table 15, equation (E.2) is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{a_0}{\theta} \cos^2(b_0\sigma(t)) \tag{E.14}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{b_0} Arctan \left(\frac{b_0 a_0}{\theta}(t - t_0) \right) \tag{E.15}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta} u(\sigma(t)) = \frac{a_0\theta}{\theta^2 + a_0^2 b_0^2 (t - t_0)^2}. \tag{E.16}$$

For the record, we also compute

$$
\begin{aligned}
u'(\sigma(t)) &= -a_0 b_0 \sin(2b_0 \sigma(t)) \\
&= -a_0 b_0 \sin\left(2 Arctan\left(\frac{b_0 a_0}{\theta}(t - t_0)\right)\right) \\
&= \frac{-2b_0^2 a_0^2 (t - t_0)\theta}{\theta^2 + a_0^2 b_0^2 (t - t_0)^2}
\end{aligned} \tag{E.17}
$$

since $sin(2 Arctan(x)) = 2cos(Arctan(x)) sin(Arctan(x)) = \frac{2x}{1+x^2}$.

For $P(\sigma)$ from line 2 in Table 15, (E.3) becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
\psi(\sigma) &= \sqrt{\alpha_0} \int \sqrt{2b_0^2 \tan^2(b_0 \sigma)} d\sigma \\
&= \sqrt{\alpha_0} \int \sqrt{2} b_0 \tan(b_0 \sigma) d\sigma \\
&= \sqrt{2\alpha_0} \ln\left[\sec(b_0 \sigma)\right] + \beta_0
\end{aligned} \tag{E.18}
$$

for $b_0, \sigma > 0$ and integration constant $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (E.18) with (E.15),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= \psi(\sigma(t)) \\
&= \sqrt{2\alpha_0} \ln\left[\sec\left(Arctan(b_0 a_0 (t - t_0))\right)\right] + \beta_0 \\
&= \sqrt{2\alpha_0} \ln\left[\sqrt{b_0^2 a_0^2 (t - t_0)^2 + 1}\right] + \beta_0 \\
&= \sqrt{\frac{\alpha_0}{2}} \ln\left[\frac{b_0^2 a_0^2}{\theta^2}(t - t_0)^2 + 1\right] + \beta_0.
\end{aligned} \tag{E.19}
$$

since $sec(Arctan(x)) = 1/cos(Arctan(x)) = \sqrt{1 + x^2}$

For $P(\sigma) = 4b_0^2 \tan^2(b_0 \sigma)$ for solution 2 in the table, (E.3) becomes

$$
\psi(\sigma) = \sqrt{\alpha_0} 2b_0 \int \tan(b_0 \sigma) d\sigma = -2\sqrt{\alpha_0} \ln(\cos(b_0 \sigma)) + \beta_0 \tag{E.20}
$$

for $0 < b_0 \sigma < \pi/2$ and $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (E.20) with (E.15),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= -2\sqrt{\alpha_0} \ln\left(\cos\left(Arctan\left(\frac{b_0 a_0}{\theta}(t - t_0)\right)\right)\right) \\
&= \sqrt{\alpha_0} \ln\left(1 + \frac{b_0^2 a_0^2}{\theta^2}(t - t_0)^2\right)
\end{aligned} \tag{E.21}
$$

214

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 3 in Table 15, equation (E.2) with $\theta = 1$ is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = a_0 \tanh(b_0 \sigma(t)) \tag{E.22}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{b_0} Arcsinh\left(e^{a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)}\right) \tag{E.23}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by computing that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = u(\sigma(t)) = a_0 tanh\left(Arcsinh\left(e^{a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)}\right)\right) = \frac{a_0 e^{a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)}}{\sqrt{1 + e^{2 a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)}}}. \tag{E.24}$$

Also, we will use that

$$
\begin{aligned}
u'(\sigma(t)) &= a_0 b_0 sech^2(b_0 \sigma(t)) \\
&= \frac{a_0 b_0}{cosh^2(Arcsinh\left(e^{a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)}\right))} \\
&= \frac{a_0 b_0}{1 + e^{2 a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)}} \\
&= \frac{a_0 b_0}{2} e^{-a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)} sech(a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)) \tag{E.25}
\end{aligned}
$$

since $cosh^2(Arcsinh(x)) = 1 + x^2$.

For $P(\sigma) = c_0$ from line 3 in Table 15, (E.3) becomes

$$\psi(\sigma) = \int \sqrt{\alpha_0 c_0} d\sigma = \sqrt{\alpha_0 c_0} \sigma + \beta_0 \tag{E.26}$$

for integration constant $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (E.26) with (E.23),

$$\phi(t) = \psi(\sigma(t)) = \frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0 c_0}}{b_0} Arcsinh\left(e^{a_0 b_0 (t - t_0)}\right) + \beta_0. \tag{E.27}$$

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 4 in Table 15 with $b_0 = 0$, equation (E.2) with $\theta = 1$ is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = a_0 e^{-\sqrt{-c_0} \sigma(t)} \tag{E.28}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-c_0}} \ln\left(\sqrt{-c_0}a_0(t - t_0)\right) \tag{E.29}$$

for $a_0 > 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = u(\sigma(t)) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-c_0}(t - t_0)}. \tag{E.30}$$

Also, we record that

$$\begin{aligned} u'(\sigma(t)) &= -a_0\sqrt{-c_0}e^{-\sqrt{-c_0}\sigma(t)} \\ &= \frac{-1}{(t - t_0)}. \end{aligned} \tag{E.31}$$

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 4 in Table 15, equation (E.2) for $\theta = 1$ is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = a_0 e^{-\sqrt{-c_0}\sigma(t)} - b_0 e^{\sqrt{-c_0}\sigma(t)} \tag{E.32}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-c_0}} \ln\left(\sqrt{\frac{a_0}{b_0}}tanh(\sqrt{-a_0 b_0 c_0}(t - t_0))\right) \tag{E.33}$$

for $a_0, b_0 > 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by computing that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = u(\sigma(t)) = 2\sqrt{a_0 b_0}\ csch(2\sqrt{-a_0 b_0 c_0}(t - t_0)). \tag{E.34}$$

We also record that

$$\begin{aligned} u'(\sigma(t)) &= -\sqrt{-c_0}\left(a_0 e^{-\sqrt{-c_0}\sigma(t)} + b_0 e^{\sqrt{-c_0}\sigma(t)}\right) \\ &= -\sqrt{-c_0 a_0 b_0}\left(coth(\sqrt{-a_0 b_0 c_0}(t - t_0)) + tanh(\sqrt{-a_0 b_0 c_0}(t - t_0))\right) \\ &= -2\sqrt{-c_0 a_0 b_0}\ coth(2\sqrt{-a_0 b_0 c_0}(t - t_0)) \end{aligned} \tag{E.35}$$

since $coth(x) + tanh(x) = 2coth(2x)$.

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 5 in Table 15, equation (E.2) with $\theta = 1$ is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{a_0}{\sigma(t)}e^{c_0\sigma(t)^2/2} \tag{E.36}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \sqrt{\frac{-2}{c_0} \ln(-c_0 a_0 (t - t_0))} \tag{E.37}$$

for $c_0 < 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by computing that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = u(\sigma(t)) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{-2c_0}(t - t_0)\sqrt{\ln(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0))}}. \tag{E.38}$$

We also record that

$$\begin{aligned}
u'(\sigma(t)) &= a_0 e^{c_0 \sigma(t)^2 / 2}\left(c_0 - \frac{1}{\sigma(t)^2}\right) \\
&= \frac{-1}{(t - t_0)}\left(1 + \frac{1}{2\ln(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0))}\right). \tag{E.39}
\end{aligned}$$

For $P(\sigma)$ from line 5 in Table 15, (E.3) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
\psi(\sigma) &= \sqrt{\alpha_0}\int \sqrt{c_0^2 \sigma^2 + \frac{2}{\sigma^2} + b_0}\, d\sigma \\
&= \frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0}}{2}\left(\sqrt{c_0^2 \sigma^4 + 2 + b_0 \sigma^2} + \sqrt{2}\ln[\sigma^2] - \sqrt{2}\ln\left[2\sqrt{2}\sqrt{c_0^2 \sigma^4 + b_0 \sigma^2 + 2}\right.\right.\\
&\quad \left.\left. + b_0 \sigma^2 + 4\right] + \frac{b_0}{2c_0}\ln\left[2\sqrt{c_0^2 \sigma^4 + b_0 \sigma^2 + 2} + \frac{b_0}{c_0} + 2c_0 \sigma^2\right]\right) + \beta_0 (\text{E.40})
\end{aligned}$$

for $\sigma > 0$ and integration constant $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (E.40) with (E.37),

$$\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= \psi(\sigma(t)) = \\
&= \sqrt{\frac{\alpha_0}{2}}\left(\sqrt{2\ln^2(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0)) + \frac{b_0}{-c_0}\ln(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0)) + 1}\right. \\
&\quad + \ln\left[\frac{2}{-c_0}\ln(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0))\right] - \ln\left[\frac{2b_0}{-c_0}\ln(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0)) + 4\right. \\
&\quad \left. + 4\sqrt{2\ln^2(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0)) + \frac{b_0}{-c_0}\ln(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0)) + 1}\right] \\
&\quad + \frac{b_0}{c_0 2\sqrt{2}}\ln\left[2\sqrt{2}\sqrt{2\ln^2(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0)) + \frac{b_0}{-c_0}\ln(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0)) + 1}\right. \\
&\quad \left.\left. + \frac{b_0}{c_0} - 4\ln(-c_0 a_0(t - t_0))\right]\right) + \beta_0 \tag{E.41}
\end{aligned}$$

for $c_0 < 0$ and $t > -1/c_0 a_0 + t_0$.

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 5 in Table 15 with $c_0 = 0$, equation (E.2) with $\theta = 1$ is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{a_0}{\sigma(t)} \tag{E.42}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \sqrt{2a_0(t - t_0)} \tag{E.43}$$

for $a_0 > 0$ and $t > t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by computing that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = u(\sigma(t)) = \frac{a_0}{\sqrt{2a_0(t - t_0)}}. \tag{E.44}$$

We also record that

$$\begin{aligned} u'(\sigma(t)) &= \frac{-a_0}{\sigma(t)^2} \\ &= \frac{-1}{2(t - t_0)} \end{aligned} \tag{E.45}$$

For $P(\sigma)$ from line 5 in Table 15 with $c_0 = 0$, (E.3) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} \psi(\sigma) &= \sqrt{\alpha_0} \int \sqrt{\frac{2}{\sigma^2} + b_0} d\sigma \\ &= \sqrt{\alpha_0} \left(\sqrt{b_0 \sigma^2 + 2} + \sqrt{2} \ln \left[\frac{\sigma}{\sqrt{2} + \sqrt{b_0 \sigma^2 + 2}} \right] \right) + \beta_0 \tag{E.46} \end{aligned}$$

for integration constant $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (E.46) with (E.43) for $c_0 = 0$,

$$\begin{aligned} \psi(t) &= \psi(\sigma(t)) \\ &= \sqrt{\alpha_0} \left(\sqrt{g(t)} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \ln \left[2a_0(t - t_0) \right] - \sqrt{2} \ln \left[\sqrt{2} + \sqrt{g(t)} \right] \right) + \beta_0 \tag{E.47} \end{aligned}$$

for $g(t) = 2a_0 b_0(t - t_0) + 2$.

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 6 in Table 15, equation (E.2) with $\theta = 1$ is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = -a_0 \cosh^2(b_0 \sigma(t)) \tag{E.48}$$

218

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \frac{-1}{b_0} Arctanh(b_0 a_0 (t - t_0)) \qquad \text{(E.49)}$$

for $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by noting that

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = u(\sigma(t)) = \frac{a_0}{a_0^2 b_0^2 (t - t_0)^2 - 1}. \qquad \text{(E.50)}$$

For the record, we also compute

$$
\begin{aligned}
u'(\sigma(t)) &= -a_0 b_0 \sinh(2 b_0 \sigma(t)) \\
&= -a_0 b_0 \sinh(2 Arctanh(b_0 a_0 (t - t_0))) \\
&= \frac{2 b_0^2 a_0^2 (t - t_0)}{a_0^2 b_0^2 (t - t_0)^2 - 1} \qquad \text{(E.51)}
\end{aligned}
$$

since $sinh(2Arctanh(x)) = 2cosh(Arctanh(x))sinh(Arctanh(x)) = \frac{2x}{1-x^2}$.

For $P(\sigma)$ from line 6 in Table 15, (E.3) becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
\psi(\sigma) &= \sqrt{\alpha_0} \int \sqrt{2 b_0^2 \tanh^2(b_0 \sigma) + c_0} \, d\sigma \\
&= -\sqrt{2\alpha_0} \ln \left[2 \left(\sqrt{2} b_0 \tanh(b_0 \sigma) + \sqrt{c_0 + 2 b_0^2 \tanh^2(b_0 \sigma)} \right) \right] \\
&\quad + \frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0}}{b_0} \sqrt{c_0 + 2 b_0^2} Arctanh \left[\frac{\sqrt{c_0 + 2 b_0^2 tanh(b_0 \sigma)}}{\sqrt{c_0 + 2 b_0^2 tanh^2(b_0 \sigma)}} \right] + \beta_0 \quad \text{(E.52)}
\end{aligned}
$$

for $c_0 \geq -2 b_0^2$ and integration constant $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$.

Composing (E.52) with (E.49),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= \psi(\sigma(t)) = \\
&-\sqrt{2\alpha_0} \ln \left[2 \left(\sqrt{c_0 + 2 b_0^4 a_0^2 (t - t_0)^2} - \sqrt{2} b_0^2 a_0 (t - t_0) \right) \right] \\
&-\frac{\sqrt{\alpha_0}}{b_0} \sqrt{c_0 + 2 b_0^2} Arctanh \left[\sqrt{\frac{(c_0 + 2 b_0^2) b_0^2 a_0^2 (t - t_0)^2}{c_0 + 2 b_0^4 a_0^2 (t - t_0)^2}} \right] + \beta_0. \quad \text{(E.53)}
\end{aligned}
$$

For $u(\sigma)$ from line 7 in Table 15, equation (E.2) is

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{a_0}{\theta \sigma(t)^{b_0}}, \qquad \text{(E.54)}$$

which has solution

$$\sigma(t) = \left(\frac{(1+b_0)a_0}{\theta}(t-t_0) \right)^{1/(1+b_0)} \tag{E.55}$$

for $\theta > 0$ and $t_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. One can check this by computing

$$\dot{\sigma}(t) = \frac{1}{\theta}u(\sigma(t)) = \frac{a_0}{\theta}\left(\frac{(1+b_0)a_0}{\theta}(t-t_0) \right)^{-b_0/(1+b_0)}. \tag{E.56}$$

Also, we will use that

$$u'(\sigma(t)) = \frac{-b_0\theta}{(1+b_0)(t-t_0)}. \tag{E.57}$$

For $P(\sigma)$ from line 7, (E.3) is

$$\begin{aligned}
\psi(\sigma) &= \sqrt{\alpha_0} \int \sqrt{\frac{b_0(b_0+1)}{\sigma^2} + c_0} \ d\sigma \\
&= \beta_0 + \sqrt{\alpha_0}\left(\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1) + c_0\sigma^2} \right. \\
&\quad \left. -\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1)}\log\left(\frac{\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1)} + \sqrt{b_0(b_0+1) + c_0\sigma^2}}{\sigma} \right) \right)
\end{aligned} \tag{E.58}$$

for $b_0 > 0$ and $\beta_0 \in \mathbb{R}$. Composing (E.58) with (E.55),

$$\begin{aligned}
\phi(t) &= \beta_0 + \sqrt{\alpha_0}\left(\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1) + c_0\sigma(t)^2} \right. \\
&\quad \left. -\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1)}\log\left(\frac{\sqrt{b_0(b_0+1)} + \sqrt{b_0(b_0+1) + c_0\sigma(t)^2}}{\sigma(t)} \right) \right)
\end{aligned} \tag{E.59}$$

for $\sigma(t)$ in (E.55).

A P P E N D I X   F

EXTRA CONSERVATION EQUATION

As noted in section 1.2, the correspondences in this thesis do not rely on $T_{ij}^{(2)}$ in (1.7) satisfying the conservation equation (1.12). For each theorem in Chapters 3-7, we now record the EMP or NLS analogue of (1.12) for $l = 0$. For an arbitrary diagonal metric g_{ij} one can compute, using the definition of the Christoffel symbols in (1.2), that the equation

$$div(T^{(2)})_{l=0} = 0 \tag{F.1}$$

for $T_{ij}^{(2)}$ in (1.7) takes the form

$$\dot{\rho} + \left(\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{d} g^{ii} \dot{g}_{ii} \right) (\rho + p) = 0 \tag{F.2}$$

where dot denotes differentiation with respect to $x_0 = t$.

For the FRLW metric (3.1), the conservation equation (F.2) is

$$\dot{\rho} + dH(\rho + p) = 0 \tag{F.3}$$

for $H(t) = \dot{a}(t)/a(t)$.

Composing (F.3) with $f(\tau)$ from the EMP Theorem 3.1.1 and multiplying by $f'(\tau)$, we obtain $\dot{\rho}(f(\tau))f'(\tau) + dH(f(\tau))f'(\tau)(\rho(f(\tau)) + p(f(\tau))) = 0$. That is, by the relation (3.20) and the definition (3.12) of $\tau(t)$, we obtain the analogue conservation equation

$$\varrho' + \frac{d}{q} H_Y (\varrho + \ \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.4}$$

221

in the EMP variables, for $H_Y(\tau) \stackrel{def.}{=} Y'(\tau)/Y(\tau)$, $Y(\tau) = a(f(\tau))^q$ ($q \neq 0$) and $\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau))$, $\mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau))$.

Composing (F.3) with $g(\sigma)$ from the NLS Theorem 3.2.1 and multiplying by $g'(\sigma)$, we obtain $\dot{\rho}(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) + dH(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma)(\rho(g(\sigma)) + p(g(\sigma))) = 0$. That is, by the relation (3.109) and the definition (3.101) of $\sigma(t)$, we obtain the analogue conservation equation

$$\rho' - dH_u(\rho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.5}$$

in the NLS variables, for $H_u(\sigma) \stackrel{def.}{=} u'(\sigma)/u(\sigma)$, $u(\sigma) = 1/a(g(\sigma))$ and $\rho(\sigma) = \rho(g(\sigma))$, $\mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(g(\sigma))$.

Composing (F.3) with $g(\sigma)$ from the alternate NLS Theorem 3.3.1 and multiplying by $g'(\sigma)$ we obtain $\dot{\rho}(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) + dH(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma)(\rho(g(\sigma)) + p(g(\sigma))) = 0$. That is, by the relation (3.164) and the definition (3.156) of $\sigma(t)$, we obtain the analogue equation

$$\rho' - \frac{2d}{n_j}H_u(\rho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.6}$$

in the alternate NLS variables for $H_u(\sigma) \stackrel{def.}{=} u'(\sigma)/u(\sigma)$, $u(\sigma) = 1/a(g(\sigma))^{n_j/2}$ ($n_j \neq 0$) and $\rho(\sigma) = \rho(g(\sigma))$, $\mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(g(\sigma))$.

For the Bianchi I metric (4.1), the conservation equation (F.2) is

$$\dot{\rho} + \frac{1}{\nu}H_R(\rho + p) = 0 \tag{F.7}$$

for $H_R(t) = \dot{R}(t)/R(t)$ and $R(t) = (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))^\nu$.

Composing (F.7) with $f(\tau)$ from the EMP Theorem 4.1.1 and multiplying by $f'(\tau)$ we obtain $\dot{\rho}(f(\tau))f'(\tau) + \frac{1}{\nu}H_R(f(\tau))f'(\tau)(\rho(f(\tau)) + p(f(\tau))) = 0$. That is, by the relation (4.36) and the definition (4.11) of $\tau(t)$ we obtain

$$\varrho' + \frac{1}{\nu q}H_Y(\varrho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.8}$$

in the EMP variables for $H_Y(\tau) \overset{def.}{=} Y'(\tau)/Y(\tau)$, $Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q$ $(q \neq 0)$ and $\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau))$, $\mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau))$.

Composing (F.7) with $g(\sigma)$ from the NLS Theorem 4.2.1, multiplying by $g'(\sigma)$ and using (4.102) and (4.89) we obtain

$$\rho' - H_u(\rho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.9}$$

for $H_u(\sigma) \overset{def.}{=} u'(\sigma)/u(\sigma)$, $u(\sigma) = 1/R(g(\sigma))^{1/\nu}$ $(\nu \neq 0)$ and $\rho(\sigma) = \rho(g(\sigma))$, $\mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(g(\sigma))$.

For the conformal version (5.1) of the Bianchi I metric, the conservation equation (F.2) is

$$\dot{\rho} + \frac{1}{\nu}H_R(\rho + p) = 0 \tag{F.10}$$

for $H_R(t) = \dot{R}(t)/R(t)$ and $R(t) = (a_1(t)\cdots a_d(t))^\nu$.

Composing (F.10) with $f(\tau)$ from Theorem 5.1.1 and using (5.10), (5.40) we get the analogue conservation equation

$$\varrho' + \frac{1}{q\nu}H_Y(\varrho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.11}$$

in the EMP variables for $H_Y(\tau) \overset{def.}{=} Y'(\tau)/Y(\tau)$, $Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q$ $(q \neq 0)$ and $\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau))$, $\mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau))$.

Composing (F.10) with $g(\sigma) \overset{def.}{=} \sigma + t_0$ from Theorem 5.2.1 we obtain $\dot{\rho}(\sigma + t_0) + \frac{1}{\nu}H_R(\sigma + t_0)(\rho(\sigma + t_0) + p(\sigma + t_0)) = 0$. By (5.79), we obtain

$$\rho' - H_u(\rho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.12}$$

for the conservation equation in NLS variables for the Bianchi I metric (5.1), where $H_u(\sigma) \overset{def.}{=} u'(\sigma)/u(\sigma)$, $u(\sigma) = 1/R(\sigma + t_0)^{1/\nu}$ and $\rho(\sigma) = \rho(\sigma + t_0)$, $\mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(\sigma + t_0)$.

For the Bianchi V metric (6.1), the conservation equation (F.2) is

$$\dot{\rho} + \frac{1}{\nu}H_R(\rho + p) = 0 \tag{F.13}$$

for $H_R(t) = \dot{R}(t)/R(t)$ and $R(t) = (X_1(t) \cdots X_d(t))^\nu$.

Composing (F.13) with $f(\tau)$ from the EMP Theorem 6.1.1 and multiplying by $f'(\tau)$ we obtain $\dot{\rho}(f(\tau))f'(\tau) + \frac{1}{\nu}H_R(f(\tau))f'(\tau)(\rho(f(\tau)) + p(f(\tau))) = 0$. That is, by the relation (6.41) and the definition (6.12) of $\tau(t)$ we obtain

$$\varrho' + \frac{1}{\nu q}H_Y(\varrho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \qquad (F.14)$$

in the EMP variables for $H_Y(\tau) \overset{def.}{=} Y'(\tau)/Y(\tau)$, $Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q$ $(q \neq 0)$ and $\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau))$, $\mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau))$.

Composing (F.13) with $g(\sigma)$ from the NLS Theorem 6.2.1, multiplying by $g'(\sigma)$ and using (6.111) and (6.94) we obtain

$$\rho' - H_u(\rho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \qquad (F.15)$$

for $H_u(\sigma) \overset{def.}{=} u'(\sigma)/u(\sigma)$, $u(\sigma) = 1/R(g(\sigma))^{1/\nu}$ $(\nu \neq 0)$ and $\rho(\sigma) = \rho(g(\sigma))$, $\mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(g(\sigma))$.

Composing (F.13) with $g(\sigma)$ from the alternate Bianchi V NLS Theorem 6.3.1 and multiplying by $g'(\sigma)$ we obtain $\dot{\rho}(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma) + \frac{1}{\nu}H_R(g(\sigma))g'(\sigma)(\rho(g(\sigma)) + p(g(\sigma))) = 0$. That is, by the relation (6.150) and the definition (6.133) of $\sigma(t)$, we obtain the analogue equation

$$\rho' - H_u(\rho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \qquad (F.16)$$

in for $H_u(\sigma) \overset{def.}{=} u'(\sigma)/u(\sigma)$, $u(\sigma) = 1/R(g(\sigma))^{1/\nu}$ $(\nu \neq 0)$ and $\rho(\sigma) = \rho(g(\sigma))$, $\mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(g(\sigma))$.

For the conformal version (7.1) of the Bianchi V metric, the conservation equation (F.2) is

$$\dot{\rho} + \frac{d}{2\nu}H_R(\rho + p) = 0 \qquad (F.17)$$

for $H_R(t) = \dot{R}(t)/R(t)$ and $R(t) = (a_2(t) \cdots a_d(t))^\nu$.

Composing (F.17) with $f(\tau)$ from Theorem 7.1.1 and using (7.10), (7.43) we get the analogue conservation equation

$$\varrho' + \frac{d}{2q\nu} H_Y(\varrho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.18}$$

in the EMP variables for $H_Y(\tau) \overset{def.}{=} Y'(\tau)/Y(\tau)$, $Y(\tau) = R(f(\tau))^q$ $(q \neq 0)$ and $\varrho(\tau) = \rho(f(\tau))$, $\mathrm{p}(\tau) = p(f(\tau))$.

Composing (F.17) with $g(\sigma) \overset{def.}{=} \sigma + t_0$ from Theorem 7.2.1 we obtain $\dot{\rho}(\sigma + t_0) + \frac{d}{2\nu} H_R(\sigma + t_0)(\rho(\sigma + t_0) + p(\sigma + t_0)) = 0$. By (7.100), we obtain

$$\rho' - H_u(\rho + \mathrm{p}) = 0 \tag{F.19}$$

for the conservation equation in NLS variables for the Bianchi V metric in (5.1) for $H_u(\sigma) \overset{def.}{=} u'(\sigma)/u(\sigma)$, $u(\sigma) = 1/R(\sigma + t_0)^{2\nu/d}$ and $\rho(\sigma) = \rho(\sigma + t_0)$, $\mathrm{p}(\sigma) = p(\sigma + t_0)$.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

[1] R. Bali and C. Jain, Bianchi I inflationary universe in general relativity, *Pramana - Journal of Physics* **59** (2002), No. 1, pp. 1-7.

[2] J. D. Barrow, A. B. Burd and D. Lancaster, Three-dimensional classical spacetimes, *Classical and Quantum Gravity* **3** (1986), No. 4, pp. 551-567.

[3] D. Bazeia, Scalar fields: from domain walls to nanotubes and fulurenes, *Brazilian Journal of Physics* **32** (2002), No. 4, pp. 869-879, e-print arXiv:hep-th/0203050v2.

[4] V. H. Cárdenas and S. del Campo, Scalar field potentials for cosmology, *Physical Review D* **69** (2004), No. 8, 083508-083513, e-print arXiv:astro-ph/0401031v1.

[5] T. Christodoulakis, T. Grammenos, C. Helias, P. Kevrekidis, G. Papadopoulos and F. Williams, On $3+1-$dimensional scalar field cosmologies, from *Progress in General Relativity and Quantum Cosmology Research*, Nova Science Publishers (2006), pp. 37-48, e-print arXiv:gr-qc/0408056v1.

[6] T. Christodoulakis, T. Grammenos, C. Helias, P. Kevrekidis and A. Spanou, Decoupling of the general scalar field mode and the solution space for Bianchi type I and V cosmologies, *Journal of Mathematical Physics* **47** (2006), 042505.

[7] J. W. Dabrowska, A. Khare and U. P. Sukhatme, Explicit wavefunctions for shape-invariant potentials by operator techniques, *Journal of Physics A* **21** (1988), L195-L200.

[8] N. Dadhich, Derivation of the Raychaudhuri Equation, (2005), arXiv: gr-gc/0511123 v2.

[9] J. D'Ambroise, EMP and linear Schrödinger models for a conformally Bianchi I cosmology, to appear in *International Journal of Pure and Applied Mathematics*, e-print arXiv: hep-th/0809.4817.

[10] J. D'Ambroise, A Schrödinger formulation of Bianchi I scalar field cosmology, *International Journal of Pure and Applied Mathematics* **42** (2008), No. 3, pp. 405-410, e-print arXiv: hep-th/0711.3916v1.

[11] J. D'Ambroise, EMP reformulations of Einstein's equations as an application of a property of suitable second order differential equations, from *Proceedings of the 8th International Workshop on Lie Theory and Its Applications in Physics*, Varna, Bulgaria (2009), to appear.

[12] J. DAmbroise and F. L. Williams, A Non-linear Schrödinger Type Formulation of FLRW Scalar Field Cosmology, *International Journal of Pure and Applied Mathematics* **34** (2007), No. 1, pp. 117-126, e-print arXiv: hep-th/0609125v1.

[13] G. Ellis and M. Madsen, Exact scalar field cosmologies, *Classical and Quantum Gravity* **8** (1991), pp. 667-676.

[14] A. Garcia and S. Carlip, n-dimensional generalizations of the Friedmann-Robertson-Walker cosmology, *Physics Letters B* **645** (2007), No. 2-3, pp. 101-107.

[15] A. Garcia, M. Cataldo and S. del Campo, Relationship between $(2 + 1)$ and $(3 + 1)$-Friedmann-Robertson-Walker cosmologies, *General Relativity and Gravitation* **37** (2005), No. 4, pp. 685-711, e-print arXiv:hep-th/0309098v1.

[16] B. Gumjudpai, Power-law expansion cosmology in Schrödinger-type formulation, *Astroparticle Physics* **30** (2008), No. 4, pp. 186-191.

[17] B. Gumjudpai, Scalar field exact solutions for non-flat FLRW cosmology: a technique from non-linear Schrödinger-type formulation, *General Relativity and Gravitation* **41** (2009), No. 2, pp. 249-265.

[18] R. Hawkins and J. Lidsey, The Ermakov-Pinney equation in scalar field cosmologies, *Physical Review D* **66** (2002), 023523-023531, e-print arXiv: astro-ph/0112139v2.

[19] V. Joseph, A spatially homogeneous gravitational field, *Mathematical Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society* **62** (1966), pp. 87-89.

[20] P. Kevrekidis and F. Williams, On $2 + 1-$dimensional Friedmann-Robertson-Walker universes: an Ermakov-Pinney equation approach, *Classical and Quantum Gravity* **20** (2003), L177-L184.

[21] G. Levai, A search for shape-invariant solvable potentials, *Journal of Physics A* **22** (1989), pp. 689-702.

[22] J. Lidsey, Multiple and anisotropic inflation with exponential potentials, *Classical and Quantum Gravity* **9** (1992), pp. 1239-1253.

[23] J. Lima, Note on solving for the dynamics of the universe, *American Journal of Physics* **69** (2001), No. 12, pp. 1245-1247, e-print arXiv:astro-ph/0109215v1.

[24] D. Lorenz-Petzold, Higher-Dimensional Bianchi Type-V Cosmologies, *Letters in Mathematical Physics* **10** (1985), pp. 279-282.

[25] W. Milne, The Numerical Determination of Characteristic Numbers, *Physical Review* **35** (1930), pp. 863-870.

[26] M. Özer and M. Taha, Exact solutions in string-motivated scalar field cosmology, *Physical Review D* **45** (1992) R997-R999.

[27] T. Padmanabhan, Accelerated expansion of the universe driven by tachyonic matter, *Physical Review D* **66** (2002), D021301-D021305, e-print arXiv:hep-th/0204150.

[28] K. Radhakrishnan and A. C. Hindmarsh, *Description and Use of LSODE, the Livermore Solver for Ordinary Differential Equations*, NASA Reference Publication (1993), Glenn Research Center, Document ID 19940030753, e-print *http : //ntrs.nasa.gov/archive/nasa/casi.ntrs.nasa.gov/* 19940030753_1994 030753.*pdf* .

[29] R. De Ritis, C. Rubano and P. Scudellaro, Some considerations on inflationary cosmology with matter and scalar field, *Il Nuovo Cimento B* **108** (1993), No. 11, pp. 1243-1252.

[30] F. L. Williams, Einstein field equations: An alternate approach towards exact solutions for an FRW universe, from *Proceedings of the Sixth Alexander Friedmann International Seminar on Gravitation and Cosmology*, Cargèse, France (2004), *International Journal of Modern Physics A* **20** (2005), pp. 2481-2484.

[31] F. L. Williams, An EMP model of Bianchi I cosmology, from *Proceedings of the eleventh Marcel Grossmann Meeting On General Relativity*, Berlin, Germany, 2006 (2008), Vol. 3, pp. 2222-2224.